

This file is part of the following work:

**Tedla, Bemnet A. (2019) *Targeting schistosome cholinesterases for vaccine and drug development*. PhD Thesis, James Cook University.**

Access to this file is available from:

<https://doi.org/10.25903/5da91b6efb955>

Copyright © 2019 Bemnet A. Tedla.

The author has certified to JCU that they have made a reasonable effort to gain permission and acknowledge the owners of any third party copyright material included in this document. If you believe that this is not the case, please email

[researchonline@jcu.edu.au](mailto:researchonline@jcu.edu.au)

# **Targeting Schistosome Cholinesterases for Vaccine & Drug Development**

Thesis submitted by:

**Bemnet A Tedla**

College of Public Health, Medical & Veterinary Sciences

Centre for Molecular Therapeutics

Australian Institute of Tropical Health and Medicine

**James Cook University**

**This dissertation is submitted for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy**

**March 2019**

**Supervisors:**

Doctor Mark Pearson  
Professor Alex Loukas

## Statement on the contributions of others

<b>Nature of assistance</b>	<b>Contributions</b>	<b>Name</b>	<b>Affiliation</b>
<b>Intellectual support</b>	Project plan and development	Dr Mark Pearson	James Cook University
		Prof Alex Loukas	James Cook University
	Editorial support	Dr Mark Pearson	James Cook University
		Prof Alex Loukas	James Cook University
	Lab facility support	Prof Alex Loukas	James Cook University
	Ruthenium metal complex	Prof Grant Collins	UNSW (ADFA)
Dr Madhu Sundaraneedi		UNSW (ADFA)	
Prof Richard Keens		James Cook University, University of Adelaide	
<b>Financial support</b>	Research	Prof Alex Loukas NAHMRC program grant	James Cook University
	Conference support	Australia Society of Parasitology	Australia Society of Parasitology
	Stipend	JCU Postgraduate Research Scholarship	James Cook University
	Write up support		
<b>Technical support</b>	Mice necropsy	Mr Darren Pickering	James Cook University
		Mr Luke Becker	James Cook University
	Proteomics	Dr Javier Sotillo	James Cook University

## **Acknowledgments**

First and foremost, I would take this opportunity to express my gratitude to my principal supervisor, Dr Mark Pearson, for the patient guidance, encouragement and advice he has provided me. I have been extremely lucky to have a supervisor who cared so much about my work, and who took great efforts, starting from initial planning to the careful editing of this thesis. I am also extremely indebted and thankful to his family (Kathy, Emily and Hannah) for a warm welcome in their house and the great hospitality on my first day in Australia.

I also would like to express my sincere gratitude to my co-supervisor Professor Alex Loukas for allowing me to conduct this research under his auspices. As a joint thesis supervisor, Prof Loukas supported me in all stages of this work. His extraordinary experience and extensive helpful discussions are priceless. I am especially thankful to him for being available whenever needed and helping me out from various crises, scientific or otherwise, despite his busy schedule. I cannot imagine how hard it would have been for me to successfully complete my thesis without his leadership.

I extend my sincere thanks to all members of Loukas Lab, and all those who contributed directly or indirectly to the thesis. In particular, I wish to thank Darren, Javier, Mic, Ramon, and Paul who helped me in my supervisors' absence. I want to acknowledge the technical support provided by Luke Becker in two different labs who kept the worm lab running smoothly so that other students and I were able to perform experiments without too much hustle. Furthermore, I would like to

thank several other people at the AITHM, including postgraduate students, who provided a much-needed form of escape from my studies, also deserve thanks for helping me keep things in perspective. I am blessed to have gotten to know all of you and I am proud to consider you my friends.

Next, I would also like to thank Prof Richard Keene, Prof Grant Collins and Dr Madhu Sundaraneedi for the fruitful collaboration, the results of which form one chapter of this thesis.

Finally, this journey would not have been possible without the support of my family. Thank you for encouraging me in all of my pursuits and inspiring me to follow my scientific dreams. I am especially grateful to my Grandma, who supported me emotionally and financially. I always knew that you believed in me and wanted the best for me. I would especially like to express my gratitude to my wife, Martha, who has always supported me and helped me overcome the difficulties without complaining. Thank you for understanding that we couldn't celebrate our anniversary and kids birthday together for the last three years because I was away for my study. I am just so grateful that I have you all this time. Thank you for the undying love and support you have provided me and for believing in me that I can finish my PhD on time.

### **Publications by the candidate relevant to the thesis**

1. M. K. Sundaraneedi\*, **B.A. Tedla\***, R. M. Eichenberger, L. Becker, D. Pickering, M. J. Smout, S. Rajan, P. Wangchuk, F. R. Keene, A. Loukas, J. G. Collins and M. S. Pearson.  
**Polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes exert anti-schistosome activity and inhibit parasite acetylcholinesterases.** *PLOS Neglected and Tropical Diseases*, 2017, 11(12):e0006134

\*authors equally contributed

2. M. K. Sundaraneedi, A. J. Ammit, **B. A. Tedla**, M. S. Pearson, A. Loukas, F. R. Keene, J. G. Collins.  
**Tetranuclear Polypyridylruthenium(II) Complexes as Inhibitors and Down-Regulators of Phosphatase Enzymes.** *ChemistrySelect* 2017, 2, 10668.

**Abstract**

The nervous system of schistosomes has been successfully targeted by anthelmintic drugs but the use of many of these has discontinued because of toxic side effects and so there is a need to better understand key neuronal processes at a molecular level to develop safer and more effective intervention strategies that target this vital system. Cholinesterases - acetylcholinesterases (AChE)s and butyrylcholinesterases (BChE)s - are key enzymes that play a pivotal role in the nervous system of schistosomes by regulating neurotransmission through acetylcholine hydrolysis and, accordingly, are an example of such an intervention target.

The first results chapter (chapter two) of this thesis investigated the anti-schistosome efficacy of polypyridylruthenium (II) complexes and showed they were active against all intra-mammalian stages of *S. mansoni*. Two compounds, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl, which were among the most potent in their ability to kill schistosomula and adult worms and inhibit egg hatching *in vitro*, were assessed for their efficacy in a mouse model of schistosomiasis using 5 consecutive daily i.v. doses of 2 mg/kg (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri) and 10 mg/kg (Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl). Mice treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri showed an average 42% reduction ( $P = 0.009$ ), over two independent trials, in adult worm burden. Liver egg burdens were not significantly decreased in either drug-treated group but ova from both of these groups showed significant decreases in hatching ability (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri - 68%, Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl - 56%) and were significantly morphologically altered (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri - 62% abnormal, Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl - 35% abnormal). I hypothesize that the drugs exerted their activity, at least partially, through inhibition of both neuronal and tegumental acetylcholinesterases (AChEs), as worms treated *in vitro*

showed significant decreases in activity of these enzymes. Further, treated parasites exhibited a significantly decreased ability to uptake glucose, significantly depleted glycogen stores and withered tubercles (a site of glycogen storage), implying drug-mediated interference in this nutrient acquisition pathway.

Chapter three of this thesis provided the first comprehensive molecular characterization of three *S. mansoni* cholinesterases (*SmChEs*), designated as *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3*, which were identified from the interrogation of the now wholly annotated *S. mansoni* genome. Anti-*SmChE* antibodies localized the proteins to the tegument and neuromusculature of adults and schistosomula and developmental expression profiling differed among the molecules, suggestive of functions extending beyond traditional cholinergic signaling for each of them. I also reported the presence of ChE activity in parasite ES products for the first time and proteomically identified the molecules responsible (*SmAChE1* and *SmBChE1*). Functional recombinant versions of the three *SmChEs* were produced in *Pichia pastoris* and enzyme nomenclature (AChE or BChE) was verified based on substrate preference. Lastly, in the first characterization study of a BChE from helminths, evidence is provided that *SmBChE1* may act as a bio-scavenger of AChE inhibitors as the addition of recombinant *SmBChE1* to parasite cultures mitigated the effect of the anti-schistosomal AChE inhibitor dichlorvos whereas *SmBChE1*-silenced parasites displayed increased sensitivity to dichlorvos.



*SmChEs* were further characterized by RNAi-based experiments in chapter four of this thesis. RNAi-mediated silencing of individual *SmChEs*, or simultaneous silencing of all three *SmChEs*, significantly suppressed transcript and protein expression levels and AChE activity in parasites. In a dissection of the hypothesis that tegumental AChE mediates exogenous glucose scavenging by the parasite, I showed that RNAi-mediated knockdown of *SmAChE1* and *SmAChE3*, but not *SmBChE1*, significantly reduced glucose uptake by schistosomes. Parasite survivability *in vitro* and *in vivo* was significantly impaired with the silencing of *SmChEs*, either individually or in combination, attesting to the essentiality of these molecules.

Chapter five of this thesis explored the vaccine potential of *SmChEs*. When treated *in vitro* with anti-*SmChE* IgG, parasites displayed significantly decreased ChE activity, which eventually resulted in death. Vaccination with individual *SmChEs*, or a combination of all three *SmChEs*, significantly reduced worm burdens (28% - 38%, averaged across two independent trials) compared to controls. Liver egg burdens were significantly decreased for all mice across both trials (13% - 46%) except those vaccinated with *SmAChE1* in trial 1. Egg viability, as determined by egg hatching from liver homogenates, was significantly reduced in the groups vaccinated with the *SmChE* cocktail (40%) and *SmAChE3* (46%). Surviving worms from each vaccinated group were significantly stunted and depleted of glycogen stores, compared to controls.

In conclusion, this thesis has identified the burgeoning potential of a new class of anti-schistosome drugs that, at least in part, target the nervous system of the parasite and provided

a comprehensive characterization of a family of ChEs from *S. mansoni*, giving compelling evidence for the essentiality of the proteins and their utility as intervention targets against schistosomiasis.

---

**Table of contents**

Statement on the contributions of others.....	ii
Acknowledgements.....	iii
Publications by the candidate relevant to the thesis .....	v
Abstract.....	vi
Table of contents .....	x
List of Figures .....	xv
List of Tables .....	xvii
List of Abbreviations .....	xviii
<b>CHAPTER 1 - Introduction and Literature review.....</b>	<b>1</b>
1.1 Introduction .....	2
1.1.1 Schistosomiasis.....	2
1.1.2 Epidemiology and geographic distribution .....	2
1.1.3 Transmission.....	4
1.1.4 Lifecycle .....	5
1.1.5 Pathology and clinical manifestation .....	7
1.1.6 Chemotherapeutic intervention and challenges .....	8
1.1.7 A vaccine for schistosomiasis? .....	10
1.1.8 Acetylcholine, acetylcholinesterase and butyrylcholinesterase.....	14
1.1.9 Molecular diversity of AChE .....	17
1.1.10 The nervous system of schistosomes.....	18
1.1.11 Acetylcholine in schistosomes .....	19
1.1.12 Acetylcholinesterase in schistosomes.....	20
1.1.13 Non-neuronal functions of helminth acetylcholinesterase .....	22
1.1.13.1 Helminth AChE and glucose uptake .....	22
1.1.13.2 Helminth AChE and adhesion.....	23
1.1.13.3 Helminth AChE and immune responses.....	24
1.1.13.4 Helminth AChE and host pathogenicity .....	25
1.1.13.5 Helminth AChE and apoptosis.....	25

---

1.1.14	Schistosoma AChE as a vaccine target? .....	25
1.1.15	AChE inhibitors .....	27
1.1.15.1	AChE inhibitors as anti-schistosomal .....	28
1.1.16	Metal-based drugs in medicine.....	29
1.1.16.1	The use of metal-based drugs to combat infectious disease .....	30
1.1.16.2	Ruthenium complexes as antimicrobials .....	31
<b>CHAPTER 2 - Polypyridylruthenium (II) complexes as anti-schistosomes.....</b>		<b>33</b>
2.1	Introduction .....	34
2.2	Methods.....	37
2.2.1	Ethics Statement .....	37
2.2.2	Nomenclature and preparation of ruthenium complexes.....	37
2.2.3	Parasite extract preparation .....	39
2.2.4	Enzyme activity in parasite extracts and inhibition assays .....	39
2.2.5	Effect of ruthenium complexes against larval <i>S. mansoni</i> parasites .....	41
2.2.6	Effect of ruthenium complexes against adult <i>S. mansoni</i> parasites .....	41
2.2.7	Effect of ruthenium complexes on <i>S. mansoni</i> egg hatching and development .....	42
2.2.8	Assessment of enzyme inhibitory effects induced by treatment of worms with ruthenium complexes .....	42
2.2.9	Effect of glucose uptake and glycogen storage on worms treated with ruthenium complexes .....	43
2.2.10	Scanning electron microscopy .....	44
2.2.11	Cytotoxicity assays .....	45
2.2.12	Tolerability study.....	45
2.2.2.	<i>In vivo</i> efficacy of ruthenium complexes .....	46
2.2.13	Statistical analyses .....	47
2.3	Results.....	48
2.3.1	Inhibition of AChE in schistosome extracts by ruthenium complexes.....	48
2.3.2	<i>In vitro</i> effect of ruthenium complexes on larval <i>S. mansoni</i> parasites.....	52
2.3.3	<i>In vitro</i> effect of ruthenium complexes on adult <i>S. mansoni</i> parasites .....	52
2.3.4	<i>In vitro</i> effect of ruthenium complexes on <i>S. mansoni</i> egg hatching and development.....	54
2.3.5	Mechanism of anti-schistosome action of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tnl .....	56

---

---

2.3.6	Toxicity of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl .....	59
2.3.7	<i>In vivo</i> efficacy of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl .....	60
2.4	Discussion.....	63
<b>CHAPTER 3 - Characterization of novel cholinesterases.....</b>		<b>70</b>
3.1	Introduction .....	71
3.2	Material and Methods .....	73
3.2.1	Ethics statement.....	73
3.2.2	Parasite maintenance, culture and ES collection.....	73
3.2.3	Parasite extract preparation .....	74
3.2.4	Bioinformatics studies.....	75
3.2.5	Developmental expression analysis of <i>SmChE</i> genes by real-time qPCR .....	76
3.2.6	Cloning and expression of <i>SmChE</i> gene fragments in <i>E. coli</i> .....	77
3.2.7	Purification of p <i>SmChEs</i> .....	78
3.2.8	Generation of anti- <i>SmChE</i> antisera and purification of IgG .....	79
3.2.9	Immunolocalization using anti- <i>SmChE</i> antisera.....	79
3.2.10	Cloning and expression of full-length <i>SmChEs</i> in <i>P. pastoris</i> .....	81
3.2.11	<i>SmChE</i> Enzyme Assays.....	83
3.2.12	Purification of secreted <i>SmChEs</i> from adult <i>S. mansoni</i> ES products.....	84
3.2.13	Mass spectrometric analysis of purified, secretory <i>SmChE</i> .....	85
3.2.14	Bio-scavenging of organophosphorus esters by <i>SmBChE1</i> .....	87
3.3	Results.....	89
3.3.1	Identification of novel genes encoding ChE proteins in <i>S. mansoni</i> .....	89
3.3.2	Developmental expression analysis of <i>SmChE</i> genes .....	98
3.3.3	Cloning and protein expression of <i>SmChEs</i> in bacteria .....	100
3.3.4	Immunolocalization of <i>SmChEs</i> .....	100
3.3.5	Expression and ChE activity of f <i>SmChEs</i> .....	102
3.3.6	BChE and secretory AChE activity in schistosomes.....	104
3.3.7	Bio-scavenging of organophosphorus esters by <i>SmBChE1</i> .....	106
3.4	Discussion.....	108
<b>CHAPTER 4 - RNAi-mediated silencing of <i>SmChEs</i> .....</b>		<b>115</b>

---

---

4.1	Introduction .....	116
4.2	Materials and Methods.....	117
4.2.1	Ethics statement.....	117
4.2.2	Parasite maintenance.....	117
4.2.3	siRNA Design and Synthesis .....	118
4.2.4	Electroporation of schistosomula with siRNA.....	118
4.2.5	Total RNA isolation, cDNA synthesis, and real-time qPCR.....	119
4.2.6	Parasite extract preparation .....	119
4.2.7	AChE and BChE activity assay.....	120
4.2.8	Determination of schistosomula viability .....	120
4.2.9	Evaluation of protein expression .....	120
4.2.10	Glucose uptake of schistosomula treated with siRNA .....	120
4.2.11	Infection of mice with <i>SmChE</i> siRNA-treated schistosomula .....	121
4.2.12	Statistical analyses .....	121
4.3	Results.....	122
4.2.13	<i>SmChE</i> transcript reduction and protein suppression .....	122
4.2.14	Suppression of <i>SmChE</i> activity .....	124
4.2.15	Suppression of parasite viability .....	125
4.2.16	RNAi-mediated suppression of glucose uptake .....	127
4.2.17	<i>SmChEs</i> are essential for parasite development and survival in mammalian host .....	129
4.4	Discussion.....	130
<b>CHAPTER 5 - Vaccine efficacy of recombinant <i>S. mansoni</i> cholinesterases .....</b>		<b>137</b>
5.1.	Introduction .....	138
5.2.	Material and Methods .....	139
5.2.1.	Ethics statement.....	139
5.2.2.	Parasites .....	139
5.2.3.	Recombinant protein expression and purification .....	140
5.2.4.	Effect of polyclonal anti- <i>SmChE</i> IgG on larval worms .....	140
5.2.5.	Effect of polyclonal anti- <i>SmChE</i> IgG on adult worms .....	141

---

---

5.2.6. Anti- <i>SmChE</i> IgG responses in <i>S. mansoni</i> -infected mice during infection and before and after PZQ treatment.....	141
5.2.7. Vaccine trials .....	142
5.2.7.1 Mouse necropsy and estimation of worm and egg burden: .....	142
5.2.7.2 Egg viability assays.....	143
5.2.7.3 Glucose consumption and glycogen storage assays .....	143
5.2.7.4 Immune responses in vaccinated mice .....	144
5.2.8. Statistical analyses .....	144
5.3. Results.....	145
5.3.1. Anti- <i>SmChE</i> polyclonal antibodies block enzyme activity and decrease viability of larval <i>S. mansoni in vitro</i> .....	145
5.3.2. Effects of anti- <i>SmChE</i> antibodies on adult worms.....	146
5.3.3. Antibody responses to <i>SmChEs</i> during the course of infection and following PZQ treatment in mice .....	149
5.3.4. Vaccine efficacy of recombinant <i>SmChEs</i> in a mouse model of schistosomiasis.....	149
5.4. Discussion.....	152
<b>CHAPTER 6 - General discussion and future directions .....</b>	<b>158</b>
References .....	166
Appendices.....	204

---

---

## List of Figures

### Chapter 1

Fig 1. 1. Geographic distribution of the common schistosome species infecting humans .....	4
Fig 1. 2. The life cycle of the schistosome parasite .....	7
Fig 1. 3. The neurotransmission routes at the neuromuscular junction. ....	16
Fig 1. 4. AChE inhibition by organophosphates. ....	27

### Chapter 2

Fig 2. 1. The kinetically inert tri-nuclear (Rubb <sub>n</sub> -tri), linear tetra-nuclear Rubb <sub>n</sub> -tl and non-linear tetra-nuclear Rubb <sub>n</sub> -tnl).....	38
Fig 2. 2. Effect of ruthenium complexes on <i>SmAChE</i> activity in adult <i>S. mansoni</i> extracts.....	50
Fig 2.3. Activity of ruthenium complexes against adult <i>S. mansoni</i> worms. ....	53
Fig 2.4. Inhibition of <i>S. mansoni</i> egg hatching and effect on egg development by ruthenium complexes. ....	55
Fig 2.5. Action of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tnl on adult <i>SmAChE</i> and <i>SmAP</i> activity. ....	56
Fig 2.6. Effect of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tnl on adult <i>S. mansoni</i> glucose uptake and storage ability.....	58
Fig 2. 7. Cytotoxicity of ruthenium complexes. ....	60
Fig 2. 8. <i>In vivo</i> effect of Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri and Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl on <i>S. mansoni</i> -infected mice.....	62

### Chapter 3

Fig 3. 1. The amino acid sequence alignment of ChEs from <i>S. mansoni</i> and other species. ....	91
Fig 3. 2. Phylogenetic of AChEs. ....	96
Fig 3. 3. Magnified view of 3D models showing the catalytic triads of <i>SmAChE1</i> , <i>SmBChE1</i> , and <i>SmAChE3</i> ..	98



---

Fig 3. 4. Expression profiles of <i>SmAChE1</i> , <i>SmBChE1</i> , and <i>SmAChE3</i> . .....	99
Fig 3. 5. Immunofluorescent localization of <i>SmChEs</i> . .....	101
Fig 3. 6. Enzymatic activity of <i>fSmChEs</i> . .....	103
Fig 3. 7. BChE and secretory AChE activity in schistosomes. 1. ....	105
Fig 3. 8. <i>SmBChE1</i> bio-scavenges DDVP and protects parasites against DDVP-induced effects.. .....	107

#### Chapter 4

Fig 4. 1. Suppression of <i>SmChE</i> mRNA transcript and protein expression in schistosomula by RNAi.....	123
Fig 4. 2. Effects of <i>SmChE</i> knockdown on cholinesterase activity. ....	125
Fig 4. 3. Effects of <i>SmChE</i> silencing on schistosomula viability.. ....	126
Fig 4. 4. Schistosome glucose uptake is affected by <i>SmChE</i> suppression.. .....	128
Fig 4. 5. Silencing of <i>SmChEs</i> suppresses parasite establishment <i>in vivo</i> .. .....	130

#### Chapter 5

Fig 5. 1. Anti- <i>SmChE</i> antibodies inhibit ChE activity in schistosomula which leads to decreased parasite viability. ....	146
Fig 5. 2. Effects of anti- <i>SmChE</i> antibodies on adult <i>S. mansoni</i> worms. ....	148
Fig 5. 3. Antibody responses to <i>SmChEs</i> during the course of infection and following PZQ treatment in mice. ....	149
Fig 5. 4. Vaccine efficacy of recombinant <i>SmChEs</i> in a mouse model of schistosomiasis. ....	151
Fig 5. 5. Effect of p <i>SmChEs</i> vaccination on glycogen storage in, and size of, <i>S. mansoni</i> adults. ....	152

---

## List of Tables

### Chapter 1

Table 1. 1. Current lead vaccine candidates for schistosomiasis .....	12
---	----

### Chapter 2

Table 2. 1. Inhibition of acetylcholinesterase (AChE) activity in adult <i>S. mansoni</i> and <i>S. haematobium</i> Triton X-100-soluble extracts .....	49
Table 2.2. Inhibition of SmNPP-5 and alkaline phosphatase activity in adult <i>S. mansoni</i> Triton X-100-soluble extracts by a series of ruthenium complexes. ....	51
Table 2.3. Potency of selected ruthenium complexes against <i>S. mansoni</i> schistosomula after 48 h treatment. ....	52

### Chapter 3

Table 3. 1. $K_m$ and $V_{max}$ fSmChEs as estimated by Michaelis-Menten equation .....	102
---	-----

**List of Abbreviations**

°C	degrees Celsius
2YT	2X YT (two times yeast and tryptone)
AA	Antibiotic/Antimycotic
ABTS	2,2'-Azino-Bis (3-Ethylbenziazoline-6-Sulfonic Acid)
ACh	acetylcholine
AChE	acetylcholinesterase
AcSCh	acetylthiocholine
ADCC	antibody-dependent cellular cytotoxicity
Alum	aluminium hydroxide
AOX	Alcohol Oxidase
AP	Alkaline phosphatase
bb <sub>n</sub>	bis[4(4'-methyl-2,2'-bipyridyl)]-1,n-alkane (n = number)
BCA	Bicinchoninic acid
BCh	butrylcholine
BcSCh	butyrylthiocholine
BLAST	Basic Local Alignment Search Tool
BMGY	Buffered Glycerol-complex medium
BMMY	Buffered Methanol-complex medium
BSA	Bovine serum albumin
cDNA	complementary Deoxyribonucleic acid

ChE	cholinesterase
CNS	central nervous system
CO <sub>2</sub>	carbon dioxide
DALYs	Disability Adjusted Life Years
DDVP	Dichlorvos
DEPC	Diethyl pyrocarbonate
DIR	drug-induced resistance
DMEM	Dulbecco's modified eagle medium
DNA	Deoxyribonucleic acid
DTNB	5'-dithiobis(2-nitrobenzoic acid)
DTT	Dithiothreitol
EC <sub>50</sub>	Concentration required to kill 50% of parasites
EDTA	Ethylenediaminetetraacetic acid
ELISA	enzyme linked immunosorbent assay
ES	Excretory-secretory
FCS	Fetal calf serum
<i>g</i>	relative centrifugal force
<i>g</i>	gram
HRP	horseradish peroxidase
i.v.	Intravenous
IC <sub>50</sub>	Concentration required to inhibit 50% of enzyme activity

IgG	Immunoglobulin class G
IPTG	isopropyl $\beta$ -D-1-thiogalactopyranoside
kDa	kilodalton
L	litre
m	milli
M	molar
mAChRs	muscarinic acetylcholine receptors
MALDI-TOF MS	Matrix-Assisted Laser Desorption/Ionisation-Time Of Flight Mass Spectrometry
MDA	mass drug administration
MTT	3-(3,4-Dimethylthiazol-2yl)-5-diphenyl tetrazolium bromide
n	nano
nAChRs	nicotinic acetylcholine receptors
NCBI	National Centre for Biotechnology Information
OD	optical density
ORF	open reading frame
OXA	Oxamniquine
PAGE	polyacrylamide gel electrophoresis
PAS	peripheral anionic site
PBS	phosphate buffered saline
PBST	phosphate buffered saline with 0.05% Tween 20

PCR	Polymerase chain reaction
PDE	Phosphodiesterase
pH	power of hydrogen
pNPP	p-Nitrophenyl phosphate
PNS	peripheral nervous system
PRiMA	Proline-Rich Membrane Anchor
PZQ	Praziquantel
RNA	Ribonucleic acid
RNAi	RNA interference
rpm	revolution per minute
RT-PCR	Reverse transcription polymerase chain reaction
SDS	sodium dodecyl sulphate
SEM	Scanning electron microscopy
SGTP	schistosome glucose transporters
siRNA	small interfering RNA
TAC	tris (p-aminophenyl) carbonium salts
WHO	World Health Organization
YPD	Yeast extract/Peptone/Dextrose
YPDS	Yeast extract/Peptone/Dextrose/sorbitol
μ	micro

**CHAPTER 1**

---

**Introduction and Literature Review**

---

## **1.1 Introduction**

### **1.1.1 Schistosomiasis**

Schistosomiasis, also known as Bilharzia, is one of the neglected tropical diseases caused by trematodes of the genus *Schistosoma* (Webster et al. 2006). Schistosomes, a digenetic trematode (flatworm) are blood-dwelling flukes which inhabit the host vasculature, producing eggs which cause the majority of disease manifestations resulting from infection (McManus et al. 2008). While there are over twenty species of *Schistosoma*, the three species of most public health importance are *Schistosoma mansoni*, which causes hepatic schistosomiasis; *Schistosoma haematobium*, causing urogenital schistosomiasis; and *Schistosoma japonicum*, which is the causative agent of hepato-intestinal schistosomiasis. Although less common and geographically restricted to a few areas, *Schistosoma intercalatum*, and *Schistosoma mekongi* are also medically important (Olveda et al. 2013).

### **1.1.2 Epidemiology and geographic distribution**

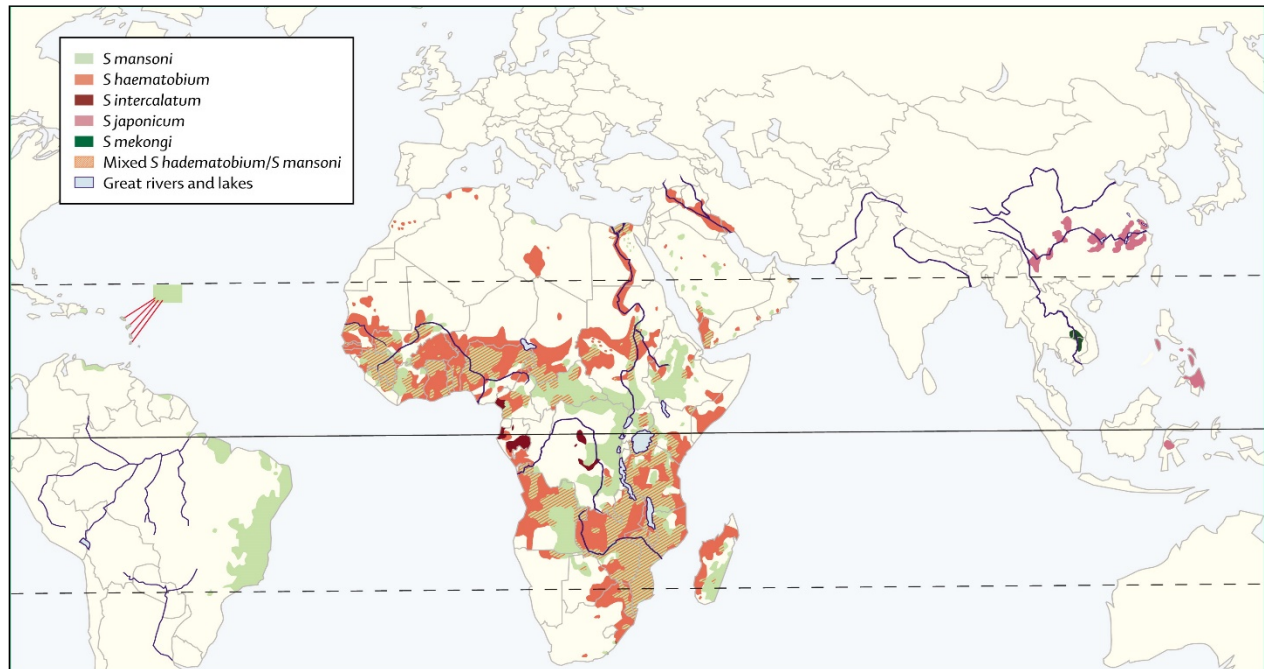
Schistosomiasis is a common cause of morbidity and mortality worldwide and described as second only to malaria in its debilitating effects when disease burden is measured with reference to Disability Adjusted Life Years (DALYs). For this reason, the World Health Organization (WHO) prioritized schistosomiasis for focused global intervention (Hotez et al. 2007).

Schistosomes infect approximately 200 million people in over 78 countries, and more than 750 million people are at risk of acquiring the infection in endemic areas (Gryseels et al. 2006; Hotez



et al. 2010). The majority of cases (90%) occur in Africa (Utzinger et al. 2009). Globally, it is estimated that 120 million infected people are clinically symptomatic, with 20 million manifesting severe symptoms from the disease (Colley et al. 2014). Schistosomiasis contributes to more than 200,000 deaths annually, with DALYs, lost to the disease potentially as high as 70 million (King et al. 2008). Infection with schistosomes can also inflict massive health and socio-economic burden on endemic areas with illness leading to disability and sluggish physical and mental development in children (Hotez et al. 2007).

The geographic distribution of the three dominant *Schistosoma* species in humans is attributed to the presence of a suitable intermediate host – the freshwater snail. *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* are endemic in Sub-Saharan Africa and the Arabian Peninsula, with the former also present in South America. *S. japonicum* is endemic in the swampland and lake regions of China, the Philippines, and Indonesia (Fig 1.1) (Gryseels et al. 2006).



**Fig 1.1. Geographic distribution of the common schistosome species infecting humans**

(Gryseels et al. 2006).

### 1.1.3 Transmission

Endemic schistosomiasis transmissions have been reported in 52 countries of three continents with moderate to high transmission rates (Colley et al.). This highlights the need for preventative measures that improve the lives of millions of people living in these regions. The disease is highly prevalent in poor rural communities where there is poor access to safe drinking water and adequate sanitation as transmission usually occurs when water sources are contaminated with feces containing parasite eggs, which hatch in stagnant or slow-moving fresh water. *Schistosoma* transmission is highest among individuals that have frequent contact with stagnant water (fishers, farmers using irrigation, women fetching water), with the most vulnerable members of

the population being pregnant women and children, who if not treated, suffer chronic health consequences into later life (Hotez et al. 2007; McManus et al. 2008).

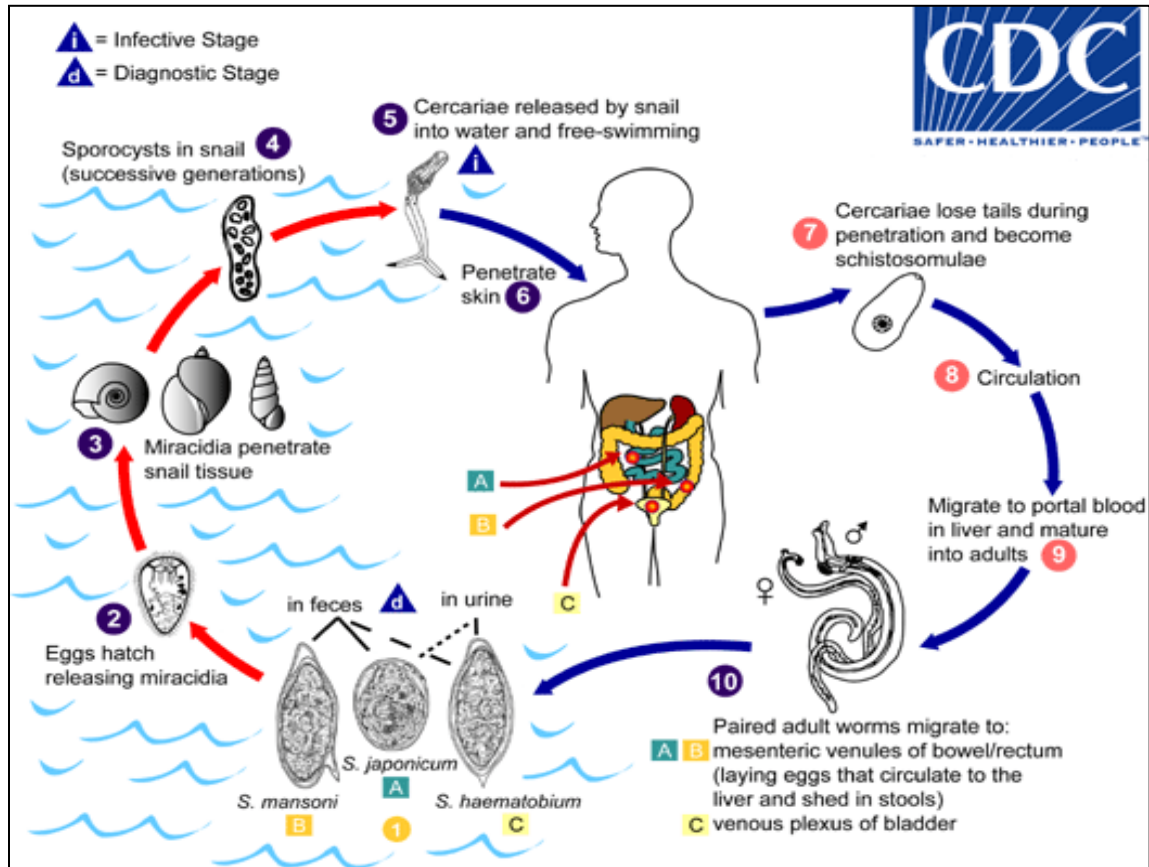
#### **1.1.4 Lifecycle**

It is notoriously difficult to study *Schistosoma* biology as the parasite has a complex life cycle involving two host; a definitive vertebrate host in which adult male and female worms grow and sexual reproduction follows, and a species-specific intermediate host, freshwater snails of the genus *Bulinus* (*S. haematobium*), *Biomphalaria* (*S. mansoni*), *Oncomelania* (*S. japonicum*) in which they multiply asexually (Utzinger et al. 2009). This multi-stage lifecycle is tightly regulated, apparently by strict control of stage-specific gene expression (Anderson et al. 2016). However, the mechanisms regulating vital gene expression in schistosomes are still poorly understood.

Eggs are excreted in feces or urine of the definitive hosts. Upon reaching fresh water, the deposited eggs hatch into free-swimming miracidia in response to changes in osmotic pressure, light and a decrease in temperature, reviewed elsewhere (Xu et al. 1990). Miracidia demonstrate host-seeking behaviors in response to chemosensory cues. It then penetrates the intermediate host, a process which is initiated by signals from macromolecular glycol-fatty acid conjugates found on the snail surface (Kalbe et al. 2004). Parasites within the snail develop into sporocysts and then cercariae (Collins et al. 2011). Sporocysts of *S. mansoni* possess a birth pore with acetylcholinesterase (AChE) activity and nervous and muscular structures that could enable release of the cercariae by actively opening and closing the pore activity (Driguez et al. 2016).

AChE activity in sporocysts has also been hypothesized to be involved in chronobiological mechanisms (Driguez et al. 2016). It is worth mentioning that the nervous system of *Schistosoma* larvae was primarily revealed using AChE staining (Bruckner et al. 1974)

Snails shed cercariae into their aqueous environment that penetrate the skin of a definitive host, causing them to undertake transformation into schistosomula. These larvae migrate through the dermal layers of the skin and then lung capillaries over a number of days to eventually reside in the vasculature of the liver, intestines or bladder, depending on the species (Ross et al. 2002). In these sites, mature worms pair at 5-6 weeks post-infection and spend the rest of their life (an average of 3-5 years) inside the host in the cupola. Female worms produce eggs, which enter the intestinal lumen or bladder to be voided in the feces or urine. Excreted eggs are fully embryonated and hatch only when they come in contact with bodies of fresh water to continue the cycle (Ross et al. 2002)



**Fig 1.2. The life cycle of the schistosome parasite**  
<http://www.cdc.gov/parasites/schistosomiasis/biology.html>.

### 1.1.5 Pathology and clinical manifestation

*Schistosoma* infection can be acute or chronic. Typically, parasites inside human tissues induce an immunological response that causes local and systemic pathological effects ranging from anemia, delayed growth and cognitive development, and malnutrition to organ-specific effects such as fibrosis of the liver and urogenital cancer (Gray et al. 2011).

Cercarial dermatitis (swimmer's itch) is the first stage of *Schistosoma* infection and is characterized by fever and a maculopapular rash at the site of skin penetration (Ross et al. 2001; Ross et al. 2002). The second stage of disease – acute schistosomiasis (Katayama fever) - is due to a host inflammatory response against the release of highly antigenic eggs. Acute infection usually occurs in children or young adults with no past exposure to the disease (Gryseels et al. 2006). It occurs within a couple of months after cercarial penetration with common symptoms including, fever, generalized myalgia, bloody diarrhea, and hepatosplenomegaly. The final stage - chronic schistosomiasis - arises mostly because of the host's unregulated immune response to entrapped eggs in tissues. It can present months to years after exposure, making diagnosis difficult. Excretory-secretory (ES) products released from the eggs deposited in different host tissues induce a localized inflammatory reaction arising from a T-helper 2 (Th2) type immune response, characterized by the formation of granuloma around the egg (Ashton et al. 2001). Prolonged years of granuloma formation due to massive infection results in extensive hepatic and intestinal fibrosis and collagen deposition that is the primary pathology of chronic schistosomiasis (Pearce et al. 2002; Sandor et al. 2003).

#### **1.1.6 Chemotherapeutic intervention and challenges**

Currently, safe and effective treatment of human schistosomiasis relies on the administration of a single drug, Praziquantel (PZQ) at an oral dose of 40 mg/kg (Trainor-Moss et al. 2016). It has comparatively few side effects and is effective against the adult stage of all common species of schistosomes pathogenic to humans, thus advantageous for the control of mixed infections

(Tchuem Tchuente et al. 2013), but it does not affect eggs or juvenile stages (Gryseels et al. 2006) and does not provide absolute protection from reinfection. The precise mechanism of action of the drug remains unclear. However, experimental work in mice has demonstrated that PZQ treatment disrupts the tegument (worm surface), exposing tegumental antigens to the host immune system (Mehlhorn et al. 1981) which results in quantitative alteration of host-parasite-specific immune responses (Mutapi et al. 2007). Interestingly, in a subset of the population, PZQ-mediated modification of the immune response confers a degree of resistance to re-infection – drug-induced resistance (DIR) (Pearson et al. 2015).

Overall, in endemic areas where the risk of re-infection is high, preventive chemotherapy, or mass drug administration (MDA) using PZQ is the mainstay of control (Mduluza et al. 2001). This periodic MDA is however unsustainable as a stand-alone control measure and ideally, should be integrated with additional intervention strategies. Besides, there is considerable concern about the development of PZQ resistance (Botros et al. 2005). This scenario underscores the increasing need for the development of novel and inexpensive drugs against schistosomiasis.

Yet another obstacle to early intervention is the lack of accurate diagnostic tools that can distinguish between active and late infections. Current diagnosis of *Schistosoma* infection relies upon microscopic detection of species-characteristic eggs in stool samples, or urine (in the case of *S. haematobium*). When prevalence and intensity of infection are decreased after chemotherapy, however, microscopic methods become less sensitive (van der Werf et al. 2003).

Immunological approaches for the detection of *Schistosoma* antibodies or antigens (e.g., circulating cathodic and anodic antigen) (Kremsner et al. 1994) offer increased sensitivity but decreased specificity and difficulties in obtaining a genuinely quantitative diagnosis are inherent problems. PCR-based diagnostics have been developed to overcome these issues, but the need for specialized equipment and training to conduct these tests in endemic settings is a disadvantage (Utzing et al. 2015).

### **1.1.7 A vaccine for schistosomiasis?**

The current schistosomiasis control strategy that relies on periodic MDA of PZQ, is logistically difficult, expensive and difficult to achieve in our lifetime (Fenwick et al. 2016 ). The development of an anti-schistosome vaccine and its integrated use with sustainable MDA strategies, therefore, is an essential tool for the global fight against schistosomiasis.

The feasibility of a schistosomiasis vaccine has been demonstrated in a series of proof-of-concept studies where laboratory animals - initially mice (Dean et al. 1983) and, later, non-human primates (Kariuki et al. 2004) - were immunized with radiation-attenuated cercariae and found to be >80% resistant to a subsequent experimental schistosomal challenge. While the acquisition of protective immunity to human schistosomiasis, either naturally occurring or drug-induced, is well documented (Correa-Oliveira et al. 2000; Black et al. 2010), it can be slow in maturing and is not widespread throughout endemic populations. In order to augment this resistance and



stimulate anti-schistosomal immunity, it is crucial that an antigen threshold is reached (Wilson et al. 2014) to perturb parasite pathogenesis through immune intervention.

Currently, vaccination strategies are focused on targeting the intra-mammalian stages of the parasite, particularly, the migrating schistosomula (widely considered most susceptible to immune attack) and adult female (to prevent the release of tissue-destructive and pathology-inducing eggs). Further, proteins of the tegument and ES fraction of these parasitic stages are arguably the most important groups of molecules to target for vaccine antigen identification due to their role in numerous fundamental interactions with the host and accessibility to the host immune system (Loukas et al. 2007). Most approaches have concentrated on identifying protective antigens from these stages and delivering these recombinant constructs or purified extracts in various formulations (McManus et al. 2008). The availability of comprehensively annotated genomes for all human schistosome species (Berriman et al. 2009; Young et al. 2012) and the publication of juvenile and adult tegumental and ES proteomic studies (Gaze et al. 2014; Pearson et al. 2015; Sotillo et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016) have provided researchers with a goldmine of bioinformatic and evidence-based information regarding the protein composition of these “sites of vaccine potential”, significantly facilitating the rational selection of vaccine candidate antigens.

**Table 1. 1. Current lead vaccine candidates for schistosomiasis**

<b>Feature</b>	<b>Candidate antigen</b>				
	<b>SmTSP-2</b>	<b>Sm-p80</b>	<b>Sh28GST</b>	<b>Sm14</b>	<b>Sm29</b>
<b>Known function of the antigen</b>	Molecular organization of membranes (Tran et al. 2010)	Renewal/recycling of the parasite surface (Siddiqui et al. 1993)	Detoxification of ROI (Vibanco-Perez et al. 1998)	FABP for lipid uptake from the host (Moser et al. 1991)	ND
<b>Expressed by all human stage</b>	Yes (Smyth et al. 2003)	Yes (Siddiqui et al. 1993)	Yes (Walker et al. 1993)	Yes (Brito et al. 2002)	Adults and schistosomula (Cardoso et al. 2008)
<b>Essential for survival</b>	Yes <sup>s</sup> (Tran et al. 2010)	ND*	ND	Yes <sup>ss</sup> (Furlong 1991)	ND
<b>Cross-species protection</b>	ND	Yes(Karmakar et al. 2014)	Yes (Boulanger et al. 1995)	Yes (Tendler et al. 1996)	ND
<b>Located on tegument</b>	Yes (Braschi et al. 2006; Tran et al. 2006)	Yes (Siddiqui et al. 1993)	Yes (Porchet et al. 1994)	Yes (Brito et al. 2002)	Yes (Cardoso et al. 2008)
<b>antigenic polymorphism</b>	Conserved (Cupit et al. 2011)	ND	Conserved (Trottein et al. 1992)	Polymorphic(Ramos et al. 2003)	ND

<b>Antibodies inhibit parasite growth <i>in vitro</i></b>	ND	Yes, ADCC** (Torben et al. 2012)	Yes, ADCC (Riveau et al. 1998)	ND	ND
<b>Evidence of protection in animal models</b>	Mice (Tran et al. 2006)	Primates (Ahmad et al. 2011)	Primates (Boulanger et al. 1999)	Mice (Tendler et al. 1996)	Mice (Cardoso et al. 2008; Alves et al. 2015)
<b>Cross-reactivity with vertebrate proteins</b>	ND	No (Siddiqui et al. 1993)	No (Trottein et al. 1992; Hughes 1993)	ND	ND
<b>Antibody recognition by resistant humans</b>	Yes (Gaze et al. 2014)	Yes (Gaze et al. 2014; Pearson et al. 2015)	ND	Yes (Gaze et al. 2014)	Yes (Gaze et al. 2014)
<b>Clinical trial status</b>	Phase I (Merrifield et al. 2016)	Preclinical (Merrifield et al. 2016)	Phase III (Mo et al. 2014)	Phase I (Merrifield et al. 2016)	Preclinical (Merrifield et al. 2016)

\*\*antibody-dependent cell cytotoxicity, \*not determined, § determined by RNAi, §§ determined from biochemical studies

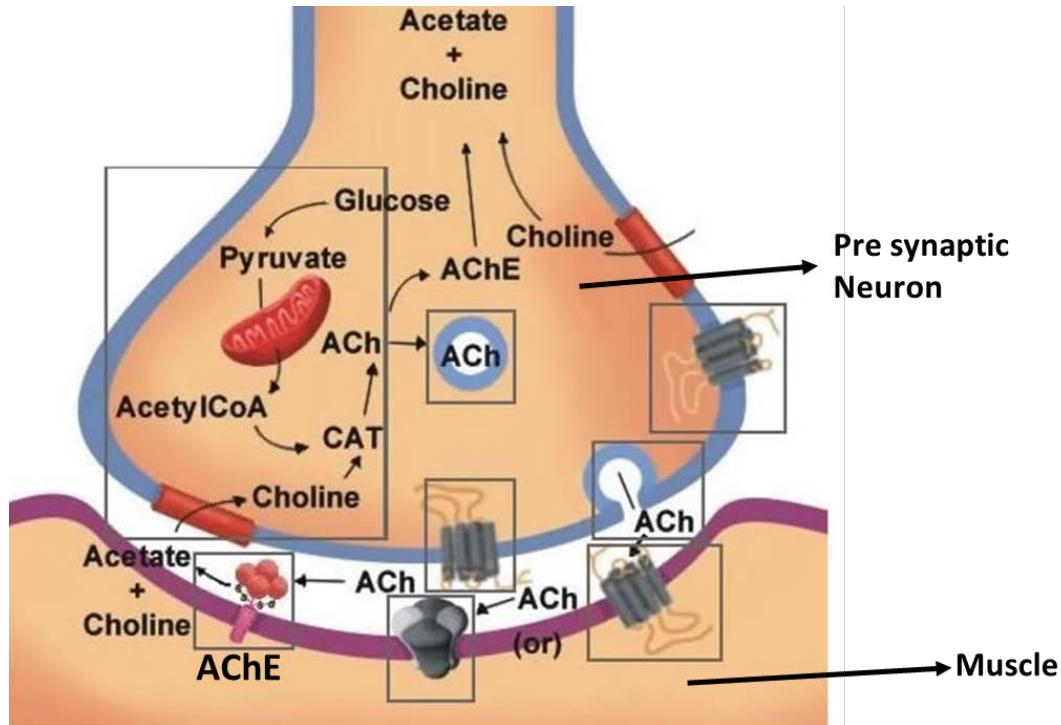
The upsurge in the availability of “omics-based” information has recently paved the way for the use of protein array technology as a vaccine antigen discovery tool. This technology permits the profiling of an individual’s immune response to the entire immunome (the protein subset of an organism that is capable of inducing an immune response in a natural infection) of a pathogen and comparing the differences in antibody profiles between susceptible and resistant endemic populations allows the identification of antigens involved in a protective immune response (Driguez et al. 2015). In schistosome research, protein array studies have contributed significantly to our understanding of the human immune responses to schistosomiasis and allowed the identification of numerous vaccine candidate antigens, both previously documented (validating protein arrays as a vaccine antigen discovery tool) and novel (Gaze et al. 2014; Pearson et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016). Indeed, one of the antigens identified from two independent schistosome protein array was acetylcholinesterase (AChE) (Pearson et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016), which has provided the impetus for the study herein.

#### **1.1.8 Acetylcholine, acetylcholinesterase and butyrylcholinesterase**

Signaling in the nervous system is mediated through the interaction of neurotransmitters (for example, biogenic amines, neuroactive amino acids and gasses and acetylcholine (ACh)) with their cognate receptors located at the neuromuscular junction (Hu et al. 2011). In the synapse of the axon terminal of a motor neuron and the motor end plate, for instance, ACh is loaded into vesicles and transported across the synapse via a pH gradient. Following synaptic vesicle fusion and neurotransmitter release, the ACh disperses within the synaptic cleft and activates

muscarinic (mAChRs) or nicotinic acetylcholine receptors (nAChRs), located on post-synaptic cells (Albuquerque et al. 2009). Stimulation of nicotinic receptors produces a rapid, excitatory effect and the result of muscarinic receptor stimulation is slower and can be excitatory or inhibitory, depending on the stimuli. Once the appropriate effector function of the AChR has been achieved, unbound ACh must be regulated or controlled in order to avoid prolonged contraction or relaxation (Nishimura et al. 2010).

The action of unbound ACh is terminated by single step enzymatic hydrolysis of the neurotransmitter into acetate and choline by acetylcholinesterase (AChE). The hydrolysis of ACh is initiated when the acyl group of ACh is initially transferred to the active-site serine of AChE, after which a water nucleophile attacks this ester, removing acetate and completing the hydrolysis. AChE is an efficient enzyme, capable of hydrolyzing ACh within 100 milliseconds of reaching the active site and catalyzing the breakdown of up to 10,000 ACh molecules per second (Dvir et al. 2010). After hydrolysis, most of the choline is transported back into the presynaptic nerve ending by high-affinity choline transporter and is then available for the synthesis of additional ACh (Day et al. 1996; Pax et al. 1996; Halton 1997) (Fig 1.3).



**Fig 1.3. The neurotransmission routes at the neuromuscular junction.**

Modified from <http://neuroscience.uth.tmc.edu/s1/chapter11.html#synthesis>

Butyrylcholinesterase (BChE) is also a cholinesterase (ChE) domain-containing protein with features similar to AChE (Barker et al. 1966; Rumjanek 1987; Camacho et al. 1995; Bentley et al. 2004) and is present in extra-neuronal tissues such as liver, lung and plasma. Enzymatically, BChE is also known as a pseudocholinesterase as it is less substrate specific for ACh than AChE and preferentially hydrolyzes butyrylcholine BCh (Mack et al. 2000), however, its physiological function is not known since humans lacking BChE activity do not show any pathology (Massoulié 2002). Since BChE presents as a soluble form in the circulation of mammals, is suggested to serve as a safeguard against the diffusion of excess ACh and orally ingested toxins into the bloodstream because of its broad specificity to different substrates (Allon et al. 1998; Huang et al. 2007;

Lockridge 2015). In addition, it could also serve as a competitive inhibitor of orally ingested compounds toxic to AChE, including plant alkaloids such as cocaine (Massoulie 2002; Zhan et al. 2003). Previous studies, in schistosomes, demonstrated the presence of pseudocholinesterase (nonspecific cholinesterase activity) (Bueding 1952; Fripp 1967; Bruckner et al. 1974; Camacho et al. 1994); however, there is no evidence so far to support the existence of BChE in schistosomes.

### **1.1.9 Molecular diversity of AChE**

Based on studies in vertebrates, AChE exists in multiple molecular forms based on differences in the carboxy-terminal region that define oligomerization state and membrane anchoring (Massoulie 2002). Catalytic subunits may be assembled into asymmetric collagen-tailed or globular molecules or remain as monomers (Massoulie 2002). The C-termini of AChE<sub>H</sub> isoforms are hydrophobic and glycosylphosphatidylinositol (GPI) anchored to cell membranes and the cysteine in this region forms an intramolecular disulfide bond between monomers to form a dimer. The AChE<sub>S</sub> form of AChE has a truncated C-terminus and remains soluble and monomeric. Thirdly, AChE<sub>T</sub> (tailed) proteins are collagen-tailed forms that associate with the Proline-Rich Membrane Anchor (PRiMA) protein on cell membranes which operate to organize AChE<sub>T</sub> into tetramers (Pezzementi et al. 2012).

### **1.1.10 The nervous system of schistosomes**

The Platyhelminthes (flatworms), to which *Schistosoma* belong, are the most primitive organisms on earth to have developed a bilateral nervous system (Baguñà et al. 1978). Schistosomes are acoelomate parasites that have no circulatory system or endocrine glands and so, in the absence of a body cavity and circulating body fluid, lack the capacity for classical endocrine cellular communication. Thus, the only mechanism for long distance signal transduction in schistosomes for the coordination of such critical processes as movement, metabolism and reproduction, is performed by the nervous system (Halton et al. 1996; Ribeiro et al. 2010).

The schistosome nervous system is comprised of two main interconnected components: the central nervous system (CNS) and peripheral nervous system (PNS). The CNS consists of a bilobed cephalic ganglion and several pairs of longitudinal nerve cords that run along the entire length of the worm (Reuter et al. 1996). The longitudinal nerve cords are connected via a network of circular regularly spaced connecting bands of nerve tissue (Reuter et al. 1996; Ribeiro et al. 2010). The PNS consists of smaller nerve cords and nerve plexuses (large meshed networks of neurons) that supply the worm's body structure, muscles and organs (Halton et al. 1996; Ribeiro et al. 2005).

There are two distinct nerve plexuses in schistosomes: the sub-muscular plexus, which innervates the body wall musculature and the oral and 9 ventral suckers (Mair et al. 2000); and the sub-tegumental plexus, which is associated with the innervation of sensory structures, such as



papillae (Gobert et al. 2003) in the male gynocophoric canal and on the tegument of the worm (Mair et al. 2004). Cholinergic neurons, nerve cells responsible for the neurotransmission of ACh, are found throughout the entire schistosome nervous system, as evidenced by histochemical staining for AChE (Fripp 1967). Further, nAChRs have been identified on the tegument of *S. mansoni* (Camacho et al. 1995) and both the body wall muscles and the surface of *S. haematobium* (Bentley et al. 2004).

#### **1.1.11 Acetylcholine in schistosomes**

While ACh has an excitatory effect on muscle contraction and motility for most flatworms (Pax et al. 1996), it acts as an inhibitory neurotransmitter in schistosomes. This fact is documented by studies showing the dose-dependent induction of flaccid paralysis of extracted muscle fiber and whole worms when they are treated with ACh (Barker et al. 1966). The exact mechanism by which this neurotransmitter inhibits muscle contraction in flatworm, however, remains unknown (Day et al. 1996).

In addition to the neuromuscular function of ACh, the neurotransmitter has a role in the uptake of exogenous glucose; an idea first postulated with the finding that nAChRs were concentrated on the male dorsal tegument (Camacho et al. 1995), a major nutrient absorptive surface for the worm pair (Rumjanek 1987). Evidence for this relationship was provided with the discovery that glucose uptake was increased in schistosomes *in vitro* with the addition of blood-equivalent concentrations of ACh and ablated with specific agonists of nAChRs (Camacho et al. 1995). The

proposed mechanism behind this uptake system is that binding of ACh to tegumental nAChRs influences glucose transport through the modulation of tegumental schistosome glucose transporters (SGTP), such as SGTP1 and SGTP4 (Skelly et al. 1996) which are also present on the surface of this parasite (Jones et al. 2002).

#### **1.1.12 Acetylcholinesterase in schistosomes**

AChE activity was first demonstrated in adult schistosomes in 1952 (Bueding 1952) and later confirmed in other stages of the schistosome lifecycle (Espinoza et al. 1991; Espinoza et al. 1991; Tarrab-Hazdai et al. 1991; Camacho et al. 1994), both biochemically and using schistosome AChE-specific antibodies. Initially the enzyme was characterized by biochemical purification from worm extracts using affinity chromatography methods employing competitive inhibitors of ACh (Goldlust et al. 1986) and, more recently, recombinant AChEs have been expressed from different schistosome species (Jones et al. 2002; Bentley et al. 2003; Bentley et al. 2005; You et al. 2016). The involvement of AChE in controlling the motor activity of schistosomes was shown by demonstrating that AChE induced paralysis in worms while the administration of eserine, an AChE inhibitor, caused a concentration-dependent longitudinal muscle relaxation in the parasite (Pax et al. 1981).

Schistosome AChE is associated with the neuro-musculature, and tegument of the parasite (Levi-Schaffer et al. 1984). In *S. mansoni* schistosomula, AChE was found to be highly enriched in the tegument (350 fold) compared to the rest of the worm (Arnon et al. 1987). The enzyme

predominantly exists in a dimeric globular form (Camacho et al. 1994) and is reportedly attached to the tegument and muscle via a covalently linked GPI anchor (Arnon et al. 1987). More recent sequence comparison of schistosome AChE with the vertebrate enzyme, however, has revealed unique C-terminii and it has been suggested that schistosome AChE may associate with another protein which is GPI-anchored itself (Bentley et al. 2003). Different levels of AChE activity has been reported among different species of *Schistosoma* and this is due to the differing amounts of the enzyme in their teguments (*S. haematobium* and *S. bovis*, respectively, have 20 and 6.9 times the amount of tegumental AChE activity than *S. mansoni*) (Camacho et al. 1994).

It should be noted that only one AChE-encoding gene from *Schistosoma* has been described over a decade ago (Bentley et al. 2003; Bentley et al. 2005). However, interrogation of the *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* genomes (Berriman et al. 2009; Young et al. 2012) has revealed multiple separate genes. In *S. mansoni*, three paralogs (*SmAChE1* (Smp\_154600), *SmBChE1* (Smp\_125350) and *SmAChE3* (Smp\_136690)) have been identified (<http://www.geneDB.org>) of comparable length encoding AChEs. Previous studies on the biochemically purified material, therefore, would have been unable to attribute enzyme characteristics to anyone AChE protein. Accordingly, it is the aim of the studies proposed herein to explore the function and interplay of all three *SmChEs* from *S. mansoni*.

### **1.1.13 Non-neuronal functions of helminth acetylcholinesterase**

It is now widely accepted that AChE can perform multiple biological functions due to its presence in multiple cell types and sub-cellular locations (Santos et al. 2007). In helminths, neuronal AChE appears to perform a “traditional” cholinergic activity while surface-associated or secreted AChE has roles in non-neuronal functions such as nutrient acquisition, parasite adhesion to host tissue and immune modulation (Arnon et al. 1999; Selkirk et al. 2005).

#### **1.1.13.1 Helminth AChE and glucose uptake**

Glucose is a primary and essential nutritional source used by schistosomes to fuel their growth and fecundity and, while the parasite is capable of glycolysis and glycogenesis, the intra-mammalian stages of the worm rely heavily on the consumption of exogenous glucose (You et al. 2014). The role of AChE in host glucose uptake by schistosomes is suggested to limit the interaction of host ACh with tegumental nAChR (Camacho et al. 1995), presumably decreasing the amount of glucose uptake through surface glucose transporters (Jones et al. 2002). The contribution of tegumental AChE to this system is evidenced by the ablation of glucose uptake with a membrane-impermeable inhibitor of AChE, which has the same result as the administration of an excess of ACh (Jones et al. 2002). The specific mechanism by which nAChRs mediate glucose transport remains unknown.

### 1.1.13.2 Helminth AChE and adhesion

Further to the observation that some adhesion proteins shared significant sequence homology with ChE domains (Scholl et al. 2003), there is now a growing body of evidence that AChE plays a non-classical role as an adhesion protein (Soreq et al. 2001; Silman et al. 2005). Examples of these ChE-like adhesion molecules include glutactin, neurotactin, gliotactin from *Drosophila* and the mammalian neuroligins (Botti et al. 1998). These proteins are absent of hydrolase activity as they lack a complete catalytic triad, but their ChE-like domain has high sequence similarity with AChE and acts as a protein-protein interaction motif, suggesting that AChE itself may function in a similar manner (Darboux et al. 1996). Further, cholinesterase-like adhesion molecules possess a typical electrostatic motif of negative potential around a zone that is homologous to the active-site gorge (Peripheral anionic site) of AChE (Felder et al. 1997). Electrostatic interactions can facilitate target recognition through a protein-complex formation, further lending support to an adhesive function for AChE (Botti et al. 1998).

The possible role of schistosomal AChE in facilitating adhesion has not been explored. Two hypotheses are that the tegumental AChE of schistosomes may aid in adsorption of host molecules onto the outer surface of the parasite, one of many immune-evasive strategies employed by the worm (Clegg et al. 1971) or assist in a vascular attachment via an adhesive interaction (Wyszomirska et al. 2005). *In vivo* treatment with anti-schistosomal compounds and AChE inhibitors such as tris (p-aminophenyl) carbonium salts (TAC) (Bueding et al. 1967), results

in a shift of the worms from the mesenteries to the liver which may occur due to an inability of the parasite to attach to the vasculature.

### **1.1.13.3 Helminth AChE and immune responses**

Acetylcholinesterase secreted by some nematodes are reported to inhibit local ulceration in the stomach by hydrolyzing ACh, which is known to stimulate gastric acid secretion (Pritchard 1993), but this was not corroborated by experimental evidences and It has been indirectly shown that the nematode *N. brasiliensis* employs parasite-derived AChE to alter the host cytokine environment to inhibit M2 macrophage recruitment, a condition favorable to worm survival (Vaux et al. 2016). Also, lysosomes are secreted by phagocytic cells during phagocytosis and the circulating ACh is suggested to enhance the release of lysosomal enzymes by selectively increasing of intracellular levels of cGMP (Ignarro et al. 1973; Ignarro et al. 1974). It is, therefore, possible that AChE secreted by helminths may interfere with the process by hydrolyzing ACh before it reaches its target immunological cells, thus reducing inflammation in the surroundings where the parasites reside and preventing efficient expulsion. Circulating ACh also plays a role in the upregulation of intestinal helminth killing by antibody-dependent cellular cytotoxicity (ADCC) through the mediation of leukocyte cGMP levels (Gale et al. 1974) and so helminth-derived AChE may interfere with this process through the hydrolysis of ACh.

#### **1.1.13.4 Helminth AChE and host pathogenicity**

Several studies on nematodes have implicated parasite-derived AChE in the pathogenesis of helminth infection. It has been suggested that AChE may provide acetate and choline precursors for helminth metabolism (Pritchard 1993). It was also suggested that AChE is involved in controlling the permeability of parasites as observed in the presence of AChE inhibitors (Schwabe et al. 1961).

#### **1.1.13.5 Helminth AChE and apoptosis**

There is data to strongly suggest that AChE is a vital component in the common pathway leading to apoptosis as more than 40 different types of cells have demonstrated AChE expression during and after the induction of apoptosis by different stimuli (Zhang et al. 2012). It is proposed that AChE play a key role in the formation of the apoptosome as silencing of the enzyme ablated the interaction between apoptotic protease-activating factor-1 and cytochrome c (Park et al. 2004). While there is no research showing the involvement of parasite-derived AChE in the apoptosis of helminth cells, the schistosome apoptosis pathway, which is active throughout the parasite's life cycle, is similar to that in mammals (Lee et al. 2011; Han et al. 2013).

#### **1.1.14 Schistosoma AChE as a vaccine target?**

There are several indications to support the usefulness of schistosomal AChE as a vaccine target, in line with the criteria used for Table 1.1. Firstly, AChE has been immunolocalized to the tegument of schistosomula and adult worms (Camacho et al. 1995; Espinoza et al. 1995), a result

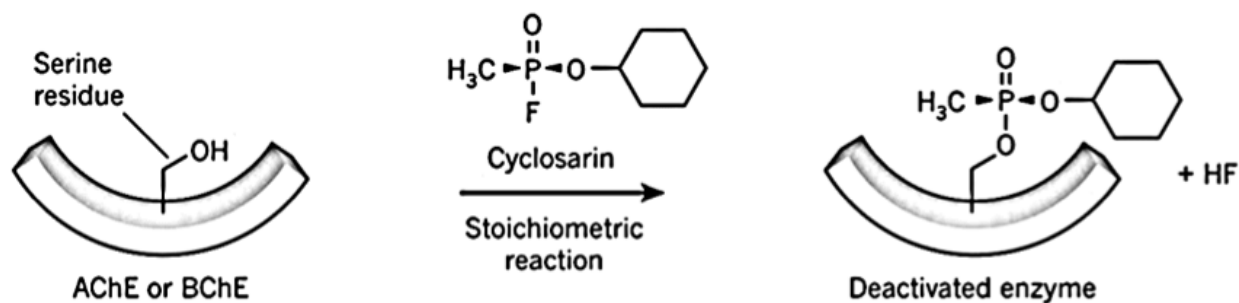
consistent with the detection of AChE activity in these membranes (Camacho et al. 1994), suggesting that the enzyme is accessible to immune attack. Secondly, a panel of monoclonal (Espinoza et al. 1995) and polyclonal (Espinoza et al. 1991; Espinoza et al. 1991; Tarrab-Hazdai et al. 1991) anti-schistosomal antibodies were able to interact with the surface localized enzyme on intact schistosomula and produce almost total complement-dependent killing of the parasite. Thirdly, some of the same monoclonal antibodies and polyclonal anti-schistosomal AChE antibodies showed no cross-reactivity against human AChE (Espinoza et al. 1991; Espinoza et al. 1991; Tarrab-Hazdai et al. 1991; Espinoza et al. 1995), indicating that a vaccine safe for human use could possibly be designed. Lastly, recent protein array studies have detected considerably high levels of circulating antibodies to schistosomal AChE in humans exhibiting resistance and low pathology to schistosomiasis, suggesting an involvement of these antibodies in a protective anti-schistosomal response (Pearson et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016). Recently, a study in *S. japonicum* has shown that a recombinant AChE is capable of generating a protective immune response that resulted in 33% male worm burden and 73% mature intestinal egg reduction, respectively, in a mice model of schistosomiasis (You et al. 2018).



### 1.1.15 AChE inhibitors

Acetylcholinesterase is expressed in all vertebrate and invertebrate animals as a key enzyme of ACh-mediated neurotransmission (Lang et al. 2012) and, owing to its critical role in organism survival; AChE is a sensitive target for both natural and synthetic inhibitors, including organophosphates (Fig 1.4). AChE inhibitors are present in the venom of many animals and have been employed in a variety of uses including insecticides and as chemical weapons (Silman I 2000).

In clinical medicine, certain medical disorders such as dementia, myasthenia gravis, and glaucoma can be directly related to a dysfunction of the cholinergic system and thus treated through modulation of the cholinergic function using AChE inhibitors (Čolović et al. 2013).



**Fig 1.4. AChE inhibition by organophosphates.** Depicted is the interaction of AChE with sarin nerve gas. The phosphate group of the inhibitor binds to the carboxyl-ester group of the active site serine and, in this form, the enzyme is no longer available for its next physiological function.

#### 1.1.15.1 AChE inhibitors as anti-schistosomes

*Schistosoma* AChE is the target of several anti-parasitic drugs, including hycanthone (Hillman et al. 1975) metrifonate (Bueding et al. 1972; Feldmeier et al. 1982), phosphonium salts and phosphoranes (Levi-Schaffer et al. 1984) and TAC (Bueding et al. 1967). Historically, some of these drugs were widely used for the treatment of schistosomiasis but have either been withdrawn from the market or are restricted in their use due to medical, operational, and economic criteria (Reich et al. 2001).

Metrifonate is an organophosphate compound initially used as an insecticide (Lorenz et al. 1955). It has been shown to be effective against *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium in vitro* (Bueding et al. 1972) but is more effective against *S. haematobium* (Davis et al. 1969; Feldmeier et al. 1982). It has been suggested that *S. haematobium* may be more susceptible to metrifonate than *S. mansoni* because of approximately 20 times much higher levels of AChE activity in its tegument (Camacho et al. 1994; Abdi 1995). Metrifonate was withdrawn from the market and further development in 1998 because of issues with toxicity (Lopez-Arrieta et al. 2006) and it is no longer on the WHO model list of essential drugs (Kramer et al. 2014).

Hycanthone (a metabolite of the anti-schistosomal compound lucanthone) was also one of the most widely used drugs both *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* (Rosi et al. 1965) and has been shown to stimulate the motor activity of the parasite through the inhibition of AChE. The drug is commercially discontinued because of toxicity to the host (Roquis et al. 2014) and the development of drug resistance (Cioli et al. 1989).

Oxamniquine (OXA) is structurally similar to hycanthone. In addition to possessing AChE inhibitory activity which increases parasite motility upon treatment (Hillman et al. 1975), it is closely associated with inhibition of the nucleic acid metabolism of the worm (Abdi 1995). Resistance to OXA has limited its use (Cioli et al. 1989) and, while this has been attributed to a mutation in a sulfotransferase, no link between resistance and AChE mutation was reported (Valentim et al. 2013). Although highly effective, albeit only against *S. mansoni* (Organization 1993), OXA has more side-effects and is more expensive than PZQ and so is being phased out of the world market (Beck et al. 2001). Studies aimed at creating safer and cheaper OXA derivatives are currently underway (Valentim et al. 2013).

Another group of anticholinergic drugs studied for their efficacy against *Schistosoma* was phosphonium salts and TAC (Bueding et al. 1967; Levi-Schaffer et al. 1984). The effect of these compounds and their derivatives were described to have substantial effects on the catalytic activity of AChE and the viability of the various life stages of *S. mansoni* worms (Bueding et al. 1967; Levi-Schaffer et al. 1984).

### **1.1.16 Metal-based drugs in medicine**

Traditionally, the use of organic compounds in the field of medicinal chemistry and pharmaceuticals has been the primary choice of any medical research (Guo et al. 1999). More recently, metal-based complexes have gained great interest as potential therapeutic agents, particularly following the remarkable accidental success of the anti-cancer drug cisplatin (Cohen 2007). The principle is that inert transition metal complexes, such as ruthenium can replace organic compounds in the targeting

of the active sites of enzymes (Debreczeni et al. 2006). One of the main advantages of these metal complexes is that they can be more readily prepared because they can be constructed from smaller, simpler, and more synthetically accessible components (Bregman et al. 2006).

#### **1.1.16.1 The use of metal-based drugs to combat infectious disease**

Encouraged by the success of many metal-based compounds as anti-tumor and anti-arthritic agents, researchers began to investigate their activity against protozoan parasites (Navarro et al. 2010) and bacteria (Li et al. 2015). Some transition metal ions have been used to form coordination complexes with the anti-malarial drug chloroquine (Navarro et al. 2010). Treatment of experimental rodent malaria with ruthenium complexes of chloroquine was demonstrated to be more effective than the parent drug, reducing the parasitemia levels by 94% compared to 55% at an equivalent concentration without producing acute toxicity (Sanchez-Delgado et al. 1996).

There are limited examples of metal complexes that have activity against helminths. The gold complex auranofin has been shown to have anti-schistosomal properties, killing parasites *in vitro* at a concentration of 5  $\mu\text{M}$  and reducing worm burdens by 60% upon treatment of *S. mansoni*-infected mice with 6mg/kg doses of auranofin (twice daily for 9 days beginning at seven weeks post-infection) (Kuntz et al. 2007). Auranofin is also documented to kill *Taenia crassiceps* metacestodes in the culture at an  $\text{LD}_{50}$  of 3.8  $\mu\text{M}$ . In the case of both flatworms, there is evidence that the gold complex exerts its activity by inhibiting the unique platyhelminth redox enzyme thioredoxin-glutathione reductase (Kuntz et al. 2007; Bonilla et al. 2008; Angelucci et al. 2009; Martinez-Gonzalez et al. 2010).

### 1.1.16.2 Ruthenium complexes as antimicrobials

From all the transition metals, ruthenium (Ru) is at the forefront of several critical areas of science, including chemotherapy, and some ruthenium (II) polypyridyl complexes have shown significant biological activity (Keene et al. 2009; Li et al. 2015) in this regard. This is partly due to the fact that Ru complexes have relatively low toxicity, are cost-effective compared to other transition metals, and have established synthetic chemistry for establishing octahedral coordination geometries (Meggers 2009). Also, they exert their biological effect by strongly binding to biological ligands with similar exchange kinetics to platinum complexes (Li et al. 2015). Further, the photophysical properties of Ru complexes facilitate the cellular accumulation and localization studies by the use of conventional techniques such as confocal microscopy and flow cytometry (Keene et al. 2009; Gill et al. 2012).

The antibacterial potential of Ru complexes was documented some six decades ago by Dwyer and co-workers (Dwyer et al. 1952) and there have been numerous recent studies documenting the efficacy of Ru complexes against a variety of different microbial pathogens (Li et al. 2011; Pandrala et al. 2013; Gorle et al. 2014).

One of the advantages of using Ru complexes as antimicrobial is that they are significantly less toxic to human cells compared to prokaryotic cells. The positively charged Ru complexes are suggested to selectively target bacterial cells over eukaryotic cells due to the presence of predominantly negative charges on the surface of the bacterial membrane and cell wall (Silhavy et al. 2010). Further, the

overall neutral charge in the outer membrane leaflet of eukaryotic cells (Mason et al. 2007) creates a significantly reduced capacity for electrostatic interaction with the Ru complexes (Gorle et al. 2016).

In eukaryotes, Ru complexes have been shown to target and inhibit enzymes such as AChE (Vyas et al. 2014). These cationic Ru complexes are speculated to bind through a combination of electrostatic and hydrophobic interactions at the peripheral anionic (PAS) site of AChE which is located at the gate of the enzyme's catalytic gorge (Bourne et al. 2005; Meggers 2009) and increasing level of AChE inhibition have been achieved by making modifications at the periphery of the Ru polypyridine scaffold (Mulcahy et al. 2008).

In this project, I will be evaluating the inhibition of schistosome AChE by Ru complexes and exploring the anti-parasitic effects of this interaction with a view to developing new chemotherapeutics to combat schistosomiasis.

## CHAPTER 2

---

### **Polypyridylruthenium (II) complexes exert anti-schistosome activity through inhibition of parasite acetylcholinesterases.**

---

This chapter has been published in its entirety as:

(Sundaraneedi et al. 2017)

## 2.1 Introduction

More than half a billion people are at risk of contracting schistosomiasis (bilharzia), a neglected tropical parasitic disease that is endemic in more than 75 countries in Africa, Asia, and South America, where over 200 million individuals are infected and approximately 280,000 die every year (Gryseels et al. 2006; Hotez et al. 2010; Hotez et al. 2014). Schistosomiasis is caused by infection with blood flukes of the genus *Schistosoma*, and disease results from the deposition of eggs in host tissues, leading to granuloma formation that can cause fibrosis, portal hypertension, and even death (Hams et al. 2013).

Despite this considerable disease burden, to date, there are no vaccines against schistosomiasis (Molehin et al. 2016). Praziquantel (PZQ) remains the only effective frontline drug to treat the parasite despite its shortcomings, which include ineffectiveness against juvenile stages of the worm (Vale et al. 2017), poor efficacy in treating pre-patent infections (Seto et al. 2011), reports of reduced efficacy in field studies (Wang et al. 2012) and the inevitable risk of the development of resistant strains in response to periodic mass drug administration (Bergquist et al. 2017). Since there are no alternative effective drug treatments for these parasites, new therapies are urgently required.

Among potential targets for chemotherapy are acetylcholinesterases (AChEs). These enzymes catalyze the rapid breakdown of the neurotransmitter acetylcholine (ACh) in both central and peripheral nervous systems of eukaryotic organisms, and so control neuronal function (Massoulie



et al. 1993). In addition to controlling cholinergic synapses, the enzyme is present in large amounts on the tegument of schistosomes (Tarrab-Hazdai et al. 1984), where it has been implicated to play a role in the regulation of host glucose uptake by the parasite by limiting the interaction of host ACh with tegumental nicotinic ACh receptors (nAChRs) (Camacho et al. 1995). These receptors are associated both spatially and temporally with surface AChE expression and are concentrated on the tegument (Camacho et al. 1995), the primary site of glucose uptake (Skelly et al. 2014). Evidence for this relationship is shown by the ablation of glucose uptake with a membrane-impermeable inhibitor of AChE (which has the same result as the administration of an excess of ACh) or specific agonists of nAChRs. The interaction of ACh with tegumental nAChRs is thought to decrease the amount of glucose uptake through surface glucose transporters but the specific mechanism for this is not known (Camacho et al. 1995; Camacho et al. 1995).

Concerning its termination of synaptic transmission, inhibition of AChE produces an excess accumulation of ACh and overstimulation of its receptors, causing uncoordinated neuromuscular function that often results in death due to respiratory paralysis (Thapa et al. 2017). As such, AChE inhibitors are widely used as pesticides (Kwong 2002) and anthelmintics (Orhan 2013). Indeed, metrifonate, an organophosphate AChE inhibitor initially used as an insecticide has also been used for the treatment of schistosomiasis until it was withdrawn from the market and further development because of off-target toxicity (Kramer et al. 2014).

In addition to organophosphates, mono-nucleated chemical complexes of the transition metal ruthenium have been shown to target and inhibit enzymes such as AChE (Vyas et al. 2014), and there are numerous recent studies documenting the efficacy of polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes against a variety of different microbial pathogens (Li et al. 2011; Pandrala et al. 2013; Gorle et al. 2014). Unlike their organophosphate counterparts, ruthenium complexes are speculated to exert their inhibitory effects through a combination of electrostatic and hydrophobic interactions at the peripheral anionic (PAS) site of AChE, which is located at the gate of the enzyme's catalytic gorge (Bourne et al. 2005), and not through direct interaction with the active site. Ruthenium complexes are thought to be less toxic to human cells than small-molecule inhibitors because of this mode of inhibition and also because the overall neutral charge in the outer membrane leaflet of eukaryotic cells (Mason et al. 2007) creates a greatly reduced capacity for electrostatic interaction with the metal compounds (Gorle et al. 2016).

Results of this study demonstrate the AChE-inhibitory action of two mononuclear and a series of di-, tri- and tetra-nuclear polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes linked by the bis[4(4'-methyl-2,2'-bipyridyl)]-1,n-alkane ligand ("bb<sub>n</sub>"; n = 7, 10, 12 and 16) against extracts of *Schistosoma mansoni* (SmAChE) and *Schistosoma haematobium* (ShAChE) and both adult and juvenile *S. mansoni* parasites *in vitro*. Results also provide evidence consistent with the capacity of these complexes to disrupt the parasite's glucose uptake ability through the inhibition of tegumental AChE, a cholinergic pathway unique to schistosomes (Camacho et al. 1995; Camacho et al. 1995). Finally, experimental results show the *in vivo* efficacy of two ruthenium complexes in a mouse model of

schistosomiasis, providing evidence that drugs based on these compounds could be a valuable addition to the chemotherapeutic arsenal against this debilitating disease.

## 2.2 Methods

### 2.2.1 Ethics Statement

The James Cook University (JCU), animal ethics committee, approved all experimental work involving animals (ethics approval number A2271). Mice were raised in cages in the JCU quarantine facility for the duration of the experiments in compliance with the 2007 Australian Code of Practice for the Care and Use of Animals for Scientific Purposes and the 2001 Queensland Animal Care and Protection Act. All reasonable efforts were made to minimize animal suffering.

### 2.2.2 Nomenclature and preparation of ruthenium complexes

[Ru(phen)<sub>2</sub>(Me<sub>2</sub>bpy)]<sup>2+</sup> and the mononuclear (Rubbn-mono), dinuclear (Rubbn-di), trinuclear (Rubbn-tri), tetranuclear linear (Rubbn-tl) and tetranuclear non-linear (Rubbn-tnl) polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes (Fig 8) were synthesized using the appropriate bis[4'-(4-methyl-2,2'-bipyridyl)]-1,n-alkane bridging ligand (bb<sub>n</sub>) as previously described (Gorle et al. 2014). Compounds were dissolved in H<sub>2</sub>O at stock concentrations of 1 mM.

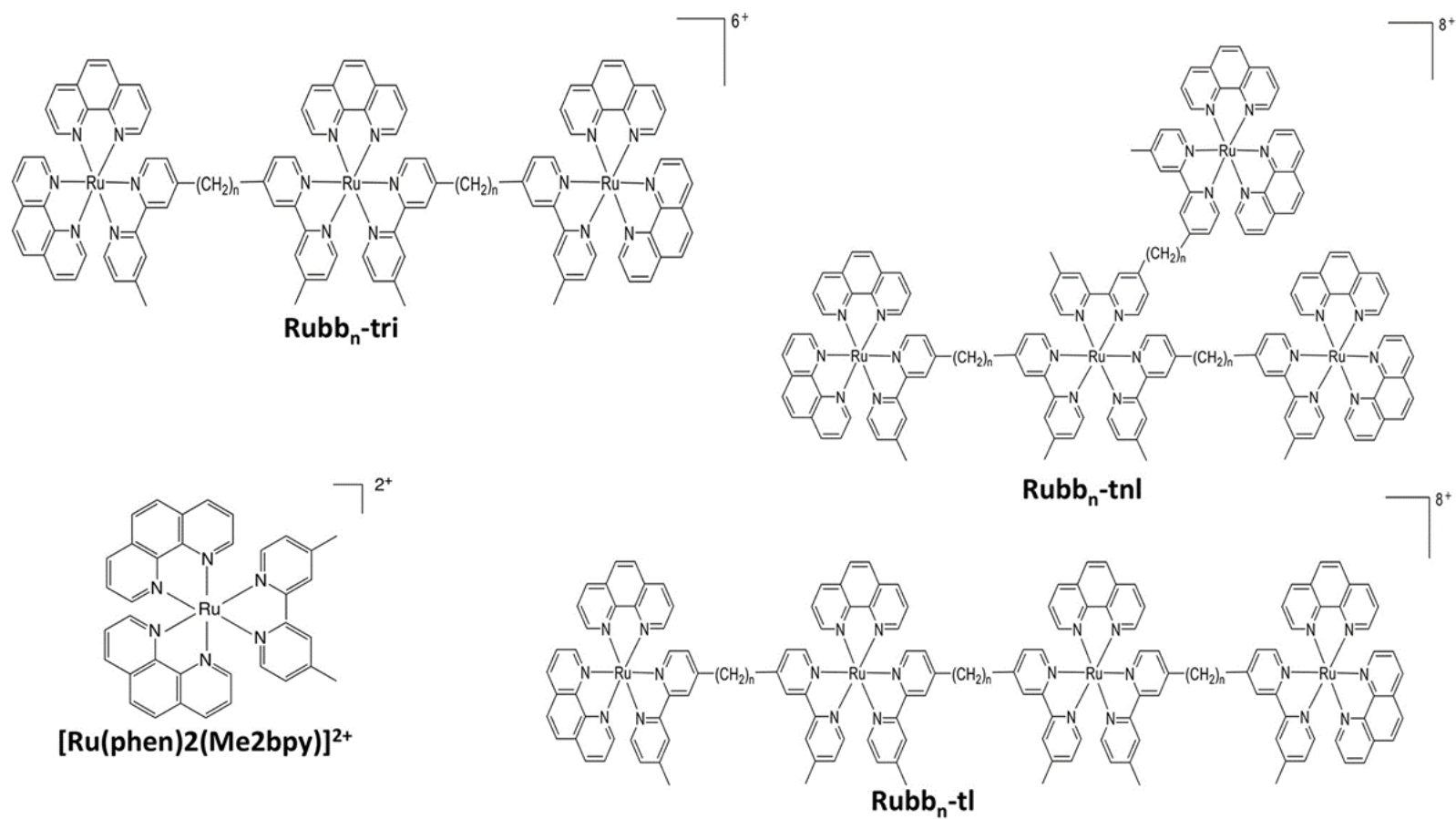


Fig 2.1. The kinetically inert tri-nuclear ( $\text{Rubb}_n\text{-tri}$ ), linear tetra-nuclear  $\text{Rubb}_n\text{-tl}$  and non-linear tetra-nuclear  $\text{Rubb}_n\text{-tnl}$  ruthenium (II) complexes.

### 2.2.3 Parasite extract preparation

*S. mansoni* cercariae were shed from infected *Biomphalaria glabrata* snails (Biomedical Research Facility, MD, USA) by exposure to light at 28°C for 2 hours. Cercariae were used to infect 6-8 week old male BALB/c mice (Animal Resources Centre, WA, Australia) by tail penetration (180 *S. mansoni* cercariae/mouse) and adults were harvested by vascular perfusion at 7 weeks post-infection (Lewis et al. 1986). *S. mansoni* eggs were purified from infected mouse livers as previously described (Dalton et al. 1997) and were used in the xWORM egg hatching assay or to make soluble egg antigen (SEA) (Tucker et al. 2013). For experiments involving schistosomula, *S. mansoni* cercariae were mechanically transformed as previously described (Tucker et al. 2013). To make PBS-soluble extracts, *S. mansoni* adult worms were homogenized in PBS (50 µl/worm pair) at 4°C using a TissueLyser II (Qiagen) and the supernatant collected by centrifugation at 15,000 xg for 60 min at 4°C. Triton X-100-soluble extracts of *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* were made in the same way except worms were lysed in buffer containing 1% Triton X-100, 40 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.4. Protein concentration was determined using the Pierce BCA Protein Assay kit (ThermoFisher), aliquoted and stored at -80°C until use.

### 2.2.4 Enzyme activity in parasite extracts and inhibition assays

*SmAChE* or *ShAChE*, *S. mansoni* nucleotide pyrophosphatase-phosphodiesterase 5 (*SmNPP5*) and *S. mansoni* alkaline phosphatase (*SmAP*) activity in Triton X-100-soluble adult worm extracts and *SmAChE* activity in SEA were determined in a Polarstar Omega microplate reader (200 µl final volume in 96-well plates). *SmAChE* and *ShAChE* activity was determined using the Ellman method

(Ellman et al. 1961); extracts were serially diluted (20 - 5  $\mu$ g) in AChE assay buffer (0.1 M sodium phosphate, pH 7.4), 2 mM acetylthiocholine (ACh) and 0.5 mM 5,5'-dithio-bis(2-nitrobenzoic acid) (DTNB) were added and absorbance was measured at 405 nm every 10 min for 5 h at 37°C. For *Sm*AChE and *Sh*AChE inhibition assays, parasite extracts equal to a specific activity of 0.55 nmol/min/well were diluted in AChE assay buffer to a final volume of 170  $\mu$ l and pre-incubated with ruthenium complexes (10 nM – 100  $\mu$ M) for 20 min at RT. ACh and DTNB were added at 2 mM and 0.5 mM, respectively and absorbance was measured at 405 nm every 10 min for 5 h at 37°C. *Sm*NPP5 activity (Rofatto et al. 2009) was measured by serially diluting extracts in *Sm*NPP5 assay buffer (50 mM Tris-HCl, pH 8.9, 120 mM NaCl, 5 mM KCl, 60 mM glucose), adding 0.5 mM p-nitrophenyl thymidine 5'-monophosphate (p-Nph-5'-TMP) and reading the absorbance (405 nm) every 10 min for 5 h at 37°C. For *Sm*NPP5 inhibition assays, parasite extract equal to 32 nmol/min/well was diluted in *Sm*NPP5 assay buffer to a final volume of 180  $\mu$ l and pre-incubated with ruthenium complexes (10 nM – 100  $\mu$ M) for 20 min at RT. A substrate (p-Nph-5'-TMP) was added to 0.5 mM and absorbance was measured at 405 nm every 10 min for 5 h at 37°C. *Sm*AP activity (Cesari et al. 1981) was measured by serially diluting extracts in AP assay buffer (0.1 M glycine, pH 10.4, 1 mM MgCl<sub>2</sub>, 1 mM ZnCl<sub>2</sub>), adding 2 mM p-nitrophenyl phosphate (pNPP) and measuring absorbance at 405 nm every 2 min for 1 h at 37°C. For *Sm*AP inhibition assays, parasite extract equal to 1 nmol/min/well was diluted in AP assay buffer to a final volume of 180  $\mu$ l and pre-incubated with ruthenium complexes (10 nM – 100  $\mu$ M) for 20 min at RT. A substrate (pNPP) was added to 2 mM and absorbance was measured at 405 nm every 2 min for 1 h at 37°C. For all kinetic enzyme assays, specific activity was calculated using the initial velocity of the reaction.

For all assays, inhibition for each sample was calculated relative to the negative control (reactions without ruthenium complexes) and reactions were performed in duplicate with data presented as the average  $\pm$  SEM.

### **2.2.5 Effect of ruthenium complexes against larval *S. mansoni* parasites**

Newly-transformed schistosomula (100 parasites) were cultured (37°C, 5% CO<sub>2</sub>) in 200  $\mu$ l of Basch medium supplemented with 4 $\times$  antibiotic/antimycotic (AA - 200 units/ml penicillin, 200  $\mu$ g/ml streptomycin and 0.5  $\mu$ g/ml amphotericin B) in a 96 well plate in the presence of a series of serially-diluted ruthenium complexes (100  $\mu$ M – 10 nM). After 48 h, parasite viability was assessed microscopically by Trypan Blue exclusion staining as previously described (Wangchuk et al. 2016). Six of the most effective compounds were tested again for their larvicidal efficacy (100 schistosomula per treatment); this time at concentrations of 200, 100, 50, 25, 12.5 and 6.25  $\mu$ M. Experiments were performed in duplicate with IC<sub>50</sub> data presented as the average  $\pm$  SEM.

### **2.2.6 Effect of ruthenium complexes against adult *S. mansoni* parasites**

Five pairs of adult worms were cultured in 2 ml of Basch medium supplemented with 4x AA in a 24 well plate in the presence of ruthenium complexes (50  $\mu$ M). Control worms were treated with an equal amount of H<sub>2</sub>O. Worms were cultured at 37°C and 5% CO<sub>2</sub> for 7 days, monitored every 24 h for motility by microscopic examination and considered dead if no movement was seen. The most effective ruthenium complexes (5 compounds) were tested in duplicate (five pairs of worms

each) at 10, 50 and 100  $\mu\text{M}$ . Data are presented as the average of each duplicate experiment  $\pm$  SEM.

### **2.2.7 Effect of ruthenium complexes on *S. mansoni* egg hatching and development**

Egg hatching was evaluated by the xWORM egg hatching assay (Rinaldi et al. 2015). Ova (5,000 per well, 200  $\mu\text{l}$  reaction volume) were incubated in 0.1x PBS, pH 7.2, containing ruthenium complexes (50  $\mu\text{M}$ ) and induced to hatch under bright light at RT for 16 h. The motility of the miracidia released from the hatched eggs was monitored every 15 s and the motility index was calculated as described (Rinaldi et al. 2015). Experiments were performed in triplicate with control reactions containing no ruthenium compounds. To investigate the effects of ruthenium complexes on egg development, triplicate sets of five pairs of adult *S. mansoni* worms were cultured in Basch media with or without 5  $\mu\text{M}$  Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, for 72 h. The eggs released into the media were counted and misshapen, malformed or immature eggs (Pellegrino et al. 1962) were scored as “abnormally developed”. Egg hatching and morphology data is presented as the average of each triplicate experiment  $\pm$  SEM.

### **2.2.8 Assessment of enzyme inhibitory effects induced by treatment of worms with ruthenium complexes**

Freshly perfused worms were cultured in the presence of sub-lethal concentrations (5  $\mu\text{M}$ ) of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl - two ruthenium compounds determined to be most effective in terms of their combined activity against schistosomula, adult worms and eggs – in Basch medium at



37°C and 5% CO<sub>2</sub>. To measure surface *SmAChE* or *SmAP* activity, 5 pairs of worms (preliminary experiments by us showed this number of parasites was sufficient to accurately measure surface enzyme activity) were transferred to either AChE assay buffer (0.1 M sodium phosphate, pH 7.4, 2 mM ACh, 0.5 mM DTNB) or AP assay buffer (0.1 M glycine, pH 10.4, 1 mM MgCl<sub>2</sub>, 1 mM ZnCl<sub>2</sub>, 2mM p-nitrophenyl phosphate). Surface enzyme activities were quantified by measuring the absorbance at 405 nm after incubation for 60 min (*SmAChE*) or 30 min (*SmAP*). Activity was measured from triplicate sets of parasites (5 pairs of worms) and each assay was technically replicated three times. For each enzyme assay, activities of drug-treated parasites were expressed relative to worms cultured without ruthenium complexes (negative controls). To measure somatic *SmAChE* activity, PBS-soluble extracts were made from worms used for surface *SmAChE* activity (triplicate sets of five pairs of worms) and then assayed in triplicate as described above. Data are presented as the average of each triplicate biological and technical experiment ± SEM.

### **2.2.9 Effect of glucose uptake and glycogen storage on worms treated with ruthenium complexes**

Five pairs of freshly-perfused worms were cultured in the presence of sub-lethal concentrations (5 µM) of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl in DMEM (1 mg/ml glucose). Media (50 µl) from each experiment was collected after 24 h and the amount of glucose was quantified using a colorimetric glucose assay kit (Sigma) according to the manufacturer's instructions. Media was collected from triplicate sets of parasites (five pairs of worms) and each assay was replicated 3

times. Glucose levels were expressed relative to media collected from worms which received no drug (negative control). Data is presented as the average of each triplicate biological and technical experiment  $\pm$  SEM. To measure the glycogen content of worms treated with ruthenium drugs, Triton X-100-soluble extracts were made and assayed for glycogen in a modified procedure described by Gomez- Lechon et al. (Gómez-Lechón et al. 1996). Briefly, 0.2 M sodium acetate, pH 4.8, was added to 30  $\mu$ g parasite extract and 50  $\mu$ l glucoamylase (10 U/ml) to make a reaction volume of 150  $\mu$ l. The mixture was incubated at 40°C for 2 h with shaking at 100 rpm, 40  $\mu$ l added to a new microplate with 10  $\mu$ l 0.25 M NaOH and the amount of glucose quantified using the colorimetric glucose assay kit. Extracts were made from triplicate sets of parasites (five pairs of worms) and assays were performed three times. Data is presented as the average of each triplicate biological and technical experiment  $\pm$  SEM.

#### **2.2.10 Scanning electron microscopy**

Control parasites and worms treated with 5  $\mu$ M Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri were prepared for scanning electron microscopy by fixation in 3% glutaraldehyde followed by successive dehydration for 15 min each in a graded ethanol series (100%, 90%, 80%, 70%, 60%, 50%), 1:1 ethanol:hexamethyldisilazane (HMDS) and, finally, 100% HMDS. Dehydrated worms were covered and left overnight in a fume hood to allow the HMDS to evaporate then mounted on an aluminum stub, sputtered with gold and visualized using a JEOL JSM scanning electron microscope operating at 10 kV. Images were acquired digitally using Semaphore software.

### 2.2.11 Cytotoxicity assays

Cytotoxicity assays were performed using the mitochondrial-dependent reduction of 3-(3,4-dimethylthiazol-2-yl)-5-diphenyl tetrazolium bromide (MTT) to formazan as described by Pandrala (Pandrala et al. 2015). The human bile duct cell line H69 was cultured in 96-well microtiter plates containing 0.1 ml of growth factor-supplemented media (DMEM/F12 with high glucose (4 mg/ml), 10% FCS, 1×AA, 25 µg/ml adenine, 5 µg/ml insulin, 1 µg/ml epinephrine, 8.3 µg/ml holo-transferrin, 0.62 µg/ml hydrocortisone, 13.6 ng/ml triiodo-1-thyronine (T3) and 10 ng/ml epithelial growth factor (EGF)) (Smout et al. 2015) to a cell density of 5,000 per well at 37°C in 5% CO<sub>2</sub>. Cell viability was assessed after continuous exposure to a concentration series (50, 25, 10, 5, 1, 0.5 and 0.1 µM) of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl, PZQ or Dichlorvos (DDVP) – a metabolite of the anti-schistosome AChE inhibitor metrifonate - for 72 h. The amount of reduced MTT to formazan within the cells was quantified by measuring the absorbance at 550 nm. Data are the average of six replicate experiments ± SEM.

### 2.2.12 Tolerability study

In order to determine the maximum tolerated dose of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl to be administered to mice infected with *S. mansoni*, five intravenous (i.v.) doses (tail vein) of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl were given to groups of three male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) daily for five consecutive days. The doses ranged from 0.25 to 10 mg/kg in PBS and were administered in a volume of 30 µl. Animals were closely monitored for adverse clinical signs throughout the study and mice showing adverse effects were euthanized using CO<sub>2</sub> asphyxiation. The highest dose that

did not cause any adverse clinical signs was considered to be the maximum tolerated dose (MTD) for five consecutive daily doses.

### **2.2.13 *In vivo* efficacy of ruthenium complexes**

Groups of 8 male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) were infected with *S. mansoni* cercariae as described above. At 35 days post-infection, groups were given five consecutive daily i.v. doses (tail vein - 30  $\mu$ l) of the MTD of either Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri (2 mg/kg in PBS) or Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl (10 mg/kg in PBS). PBS was similarly administered to the control group. Two independent trials were performed. Parasites were harvested by vascular perfusion at 49 days post-infection and the average worm burden per mouse for each group of mice (trial 1 PBS control – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 6 mice, trial 2 PBS control – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 8 mice) was calculated. Data is presented as a combination of the two independent trials  $\pm$  SE. Livers from each group (trial 1 PBS control – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 6 mice, trial 2 PBS control – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 8 mice) were collected, halved and weighed, with one half digested with 5% KOH to determine liver eggs per gram of tissue (EPG) as previously described (Tran et al. 2006). The other half of each liver was pooled according to group, homogenized in H<sub>2</sub>O and placed in identical foil-covered volumetric flasks under bright light to hatch eggs released from the livers. After 1 h, the number of miracidia in 10 x 50  $\mu$ l aliquots of H<sub>2</sub>O (sampled from the extreme top of each flask) were counted. The amount of eggs in each flask at the start of the hatching experiment was

determined by liver EPG calculations, allowing the egg hatching index of each group to be calculated by expressing the hatched eggs (miracidia) as a percentage of the total eggs. Data presented is for trial 1 only and represents the average of ten counts  $\pm$  SEM. To assess fitness of parasites recovered from mice treated with ruthenium complexes compared to controls, worms recovered from each group were pooled and five pairs were assayed for surface enzyme activity (*SmAChE*, *SmNPP5* and *SmAP*) or glucose uptake ability as described above. Somatic *SmAChE* activity was determined from homogenates made from the worms assayed for surface *SmAChE* activity, also as described above. Each assay was technically replicated three times and data is presented as the average of triplicate technical replicates of both trials combined  $\pm$  SEM. To compare eggs released from parasites recovered from mice treated with ruthenium complexes and controls, triplicate sets of worms (five pairs) from each pool were incubated in Basch media at 37°C in 5% CO<sub>2</sub> for 72 h. The number of eggs released were counted and scored on the basis of development and morphology (Pellegrino et al. 1962) by visualization under a FITC filter on a Zeiss AxioImager-M1 fluorescent microscope. Data presented is for trial 2 and is the average of triplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM.

#### **2.2.14 Statistical analyses**

Statistical analyses were performed using GraphPad Prism 7. Inhibition curves and IC<sub>50</sub> values were generated using sigmoidal dose-response (variable slope) with a non-linear fit model. One-way ANOVA with Dunn's multiple comparisons was used to determine significance (*p*), which was set at 0.05. In the case where only two groups were compared, student's *t* test was used.

## 2.3 Results

### 2.3.1 Inhibition of AChE in schistosome extracts by ruthenium complexes

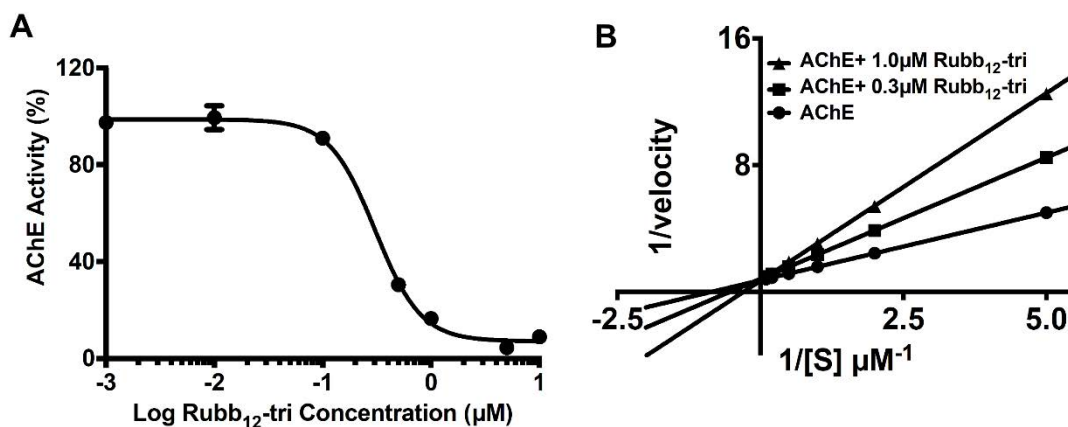
A series of ruthenium complexes of different nuclearity (mono-, di-, tri- and tetra-linear and tetra-nonlinear) and with different chain lengths in the linking ligand (bb<sub>7</sub>, bb<sub>10</sub>, bb<sub>12</sub>, bb<sub>16</sub>) were screened (1 μM) for AChE inhibitory activity in Triton X-100-soluble extracts from adult *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* and *S. mansoni* soluble egg antigen (SEA) (Table 2.1). In *S. mansoni* extracts, all tri- and tetra-nuclear complexes inhibited AChE activity by 70-90% and 7 of the 13 compounds had IC<sub>50</sub> values ≤ 1 μM. A dose-response curve and Lineweaver-Burk plot is shown for the most potent of these complexes (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, IC<sub>50</sub> = 0.3 μM) (Fig 2.2).

**Table 2. 1.** Inhibition of acetylcholinesterase (AChE) activity in adult *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* Triton X-100-soluble extracts and *S. mansoni* soluble egg extract (SEA) by a series of ruthenium complexes.

Compound	<i>S. mansoni</i> extract		<i>S. haematobium</i> extract		<i>S. mansoni</i> SEA	
	AChE Inhibition (%) <sup>a, b</sup>	IC <sub>50</sub> (μM) <sup>b</sup>	AChE Inhibition (%) <sup>a, b</sup>	IC <sub>50</sub> (μM) <sup>b</sup>	AChE Inhibition (%) <sup>a, b</sup>	IC <sub>50</sub> (μM) <sup>b</sup>
Ru(phen) <sub>2</sub> (Me <sub>2</sub> bpy)	9.3 ± 1.8	67.0 ± 11.6	13.3 ± 1.8	90.2 ± 1.2	66.5 ± 5.8	ND
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -mono	11.1 ± 0.8	18.9 ± 2.8	52.2 ± 0.5	1.1 ± 0.1	73.5 ± 4.9	ND
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -di	73.9 ± 0.5	1.6 ± 0.3	20.9 ± 0.2	16.8 ± 0.4	94.2 ± 0.8	ND
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tri	84.3 ± 4.5	0.4 ± 0.0	37.2 ± 0.3	0.4 ± 0.0	77.5 ± 0.6	ND
Rubb <sub>10</sub> -tri	78.7 ± 0.7	0.5 ± 0.0	73.6 ± 2.0	3.0 ± 0.0	91.3 ± 0.3	ND
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri	89.4 ± 0.4	0.3 ± 0.0	87.6 ± 0.4	0.7 ± 0.0	96.3 ± 1.4	0.2 ± 0.0
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tri	46.8 ± 1.1	1.9 ± 0.0	31.6 ± 0.5	18.0 ± 0.1	89.7 ± 0.1	ND
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tl	73.4 ± 1.5	1.0 ± 0.0	24.8 ± 0.3	36.4 ± 4.4	78.7 ± 8.0	ND
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tl	89.9 ± 1.6	0.3 ± 0.0	55.4 ± 2.6	1.0 ± 0.1	97.2 ± 0.6	0.2 ± 0.0
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tl	76.3 ± 1.6	2.4 ± 0.1	59.3 ± 0.1	1.9 ± 0.1	90.8 ± 0.2	ND
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl	84.0 ± 0.6	0.9 ± 0.1	19.5 ± 0.3	ND	98.1 ± 0.3	ND
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tnl	80.0 ± 0.1	0.4 ± 0.0	75.9 ± 2.5	3.2 ± 0.0	92.7 ± 0.3	0.3 ± 0.0
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tnl	73.0 ± 0.8	2.3 ± 0.1	51.1 ± 6.0	ND	89.6 ± 0.1	ND

<sup>a</sup>inhibition of *Sm*-AChE activity assessed at 1μM.

<sup>b</sup>data represents the mean of duplicate experiments ± SEM



**Fig 2.2.** Effect of ruthenium complexes on *SmAChE* activity in adult *S. mansoni* extracts.

Concentration-dependent inhibition of *SmAChE* activity in *S. mansoni* adult extracts when treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, a representative member of the ruthenium complexes tested, as determined by Ellman assay. (A) Dose-response curve of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri. (B) Lineweaver-Burk inhibition plot of *SmAChE* activity in *S. mansoni* adult extracts in the presence of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri. Data represent the average of triplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM.

Interestingly, a different pattern of inhibition by the ruthenium complexes was observed against *ShAChE* activity with the  $IC_{50}$  values being considerably more varied than was observed for *SmAChE* activity, and not all compounds showed correlated potency between the two species. In addition, there was more variability among the tri- and tetra-nuclear complexes with the more lipophilic complexes (e.g. Rubb<sub>10</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri) having stronger inhibitory activity. Rubb<sub>12</sub>-mono, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tnl showed greater activity and the  $IC_{50}$  values of these complexes were less than 1 µM. Overall, ruthenium compounds displayed a similar pattern of inhibition



against *SmAChE* activity in *S. mansoni* egg versus adult extracts, although most complexes showed a stronger inhibitory capacity towards *SmAChE* activity in SEA with three compounds (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tl and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl) achieving >95% inhibition.

In order to examine the selectivity for *SmAChE*, the series of ruthenium complexes was screened (10 µM) against *S. mansoni* extract for inhibition of two major tegumental enzymes –*SmNPP5* and *SmAP*. None of the compounds strongly inhibited activity of either enzyme at 10 µM, a tenfold higher concentration than was used for the *SmAChE* inhibition assays (Table 2.2).

**Table 2.2. Inhibition of *SmNPP-5* and alkaline phosphatase activity in adult *S. mansoni* Triton X-100-soluble extracts by a series of ruthenium complexes.**

Compound	<i>SmNPP-5</i> Inhibition (%) <sup>a</sup>	AP Inhibition (%) <sup>a</sup>
Ru(phen) <sub>2</sub> (Me <sub>2</sub> bpy)	2	3
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -mono	15	2
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -di	1	1
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tri	9	1
Rubb <sub>10</sub> -tri	12	8
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri	2	4
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tri	15	6
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tl	13	2
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tl	3	2
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tl	26	1
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl	13	1
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tnl	24	1

<sup>a</sup>inhibition of enzyme activities assessed at 10 µM.

### 2.3.2 *In vitro* effect of ruthenium complexes on larval *S. mansoni* parasites

The entire series of Ru complexes were screened for their larvicidal activity against *S. mansoni* schistosomula with IC<sub>50</sub> values calculated for the most effective compounds in a separate experiment. (Table 2.3).

**Table 2.3. Potency of selected ruthenium complexes against *S. mansoni* schistosomula after 48 h treatment.**

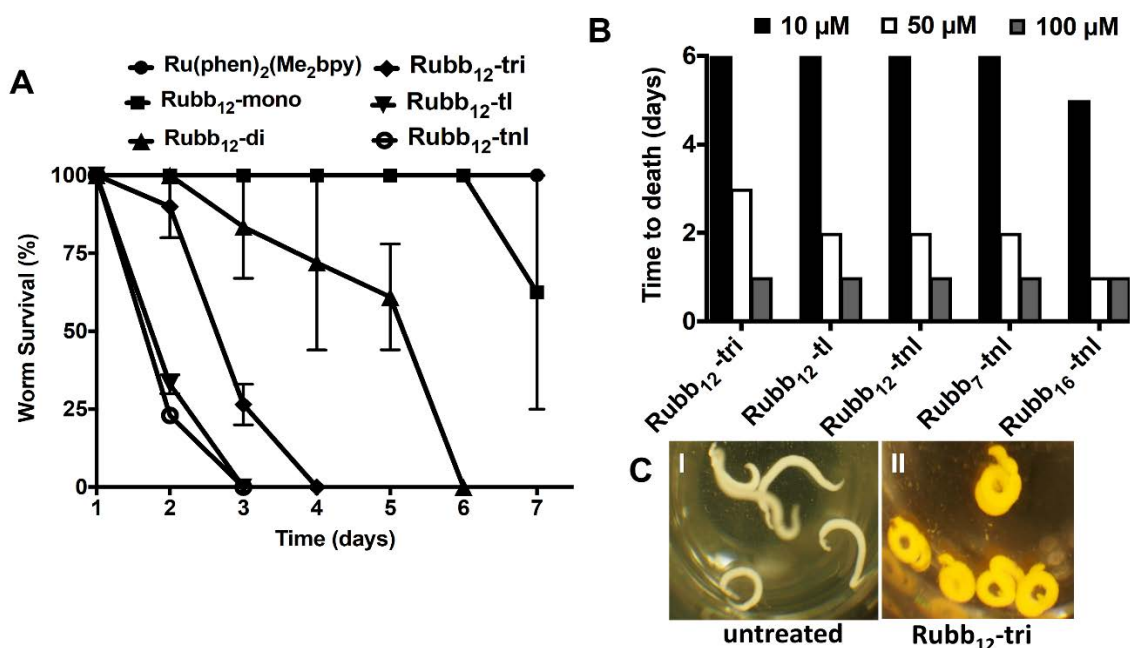
Compound	IC <sub>50</sub> (μM) <sup>1</sup>
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tri	45.1 ± 4.8
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tl	68.5 ± 3.6
Rubb <sub>12</sub> -tnl	42.8 ± 1.2
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tl	81.3 ± 0.6
Rubb <sub>7</sub> -tnl	30.3 ± 2.0
Rubb <sub>16</sub> -tnl	27.3 ± 0.4

<sup>1</sup>data represents the mean of duplicate experiments ± SEM

### 2.3.3 *In vitro* effect of ruthenium complexes on adult *S. mansoni* parasites

*S. mansoni* worms were cultured in the presence of 50 μM of each ruthenium complex to investigate their effectiveness in killing adult parasites, which was assessed by lack of motility. The effects of selected compounds on worm survival is shown in Fig 2.3A. Similar to the enzyme inhibition in parasite extracts, the tri- and tetra-nuclear complexes were the most effective

compared to the mono- and di-nuclear complexes. The killing ability increased with the increasing number of ruthenium centers in the complex, and the tetra-nuclear complexes were more active in comparison with their linear counterparts. As with the schistosomula killing experiment, the most effective compounds (five) were tested again, this time at concentrations of 100  $\mu\text{M}$ , 50  $\mu\text{M}$  and 10  $\mu\text{M}$  (Fig 2.3B). All tri- and tetra-nuclear complexes (10  $\mu\text{M}$ ) killed 100% of the parasites in six days. Treatment with the ruthenium complexes induced significant changes in the gross morphology of the parasites (Fig 2.3C). In particular, a tight coiling of the treated worms was observed.

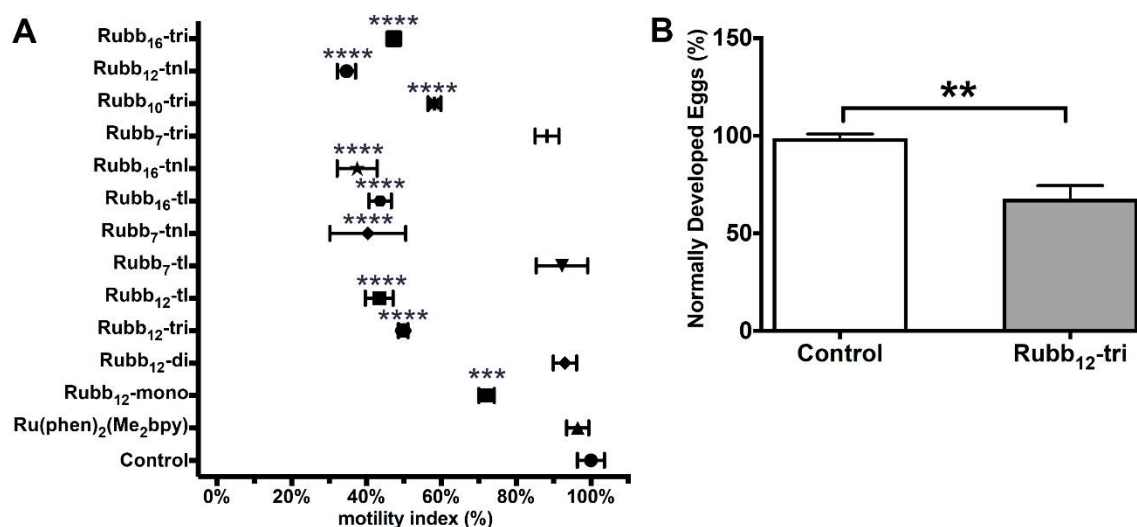


**Fig 2.3. Activity of ruthenium complexes against adult *S. mansoni* worms.** (A) Selective representation of survival of parasites (cultured in Basch media) after treatment with Ru complexes (50  $\mu\text{M}$ ). Data represents the average of duplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM. (B) Survival of parasites (cultured in Basch media) after treatment with various concentrations of the most potent ruthenium complexes determined from the screening experiment. Data represents the average of

duplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM. **(C)** Alteration in general morphology of adult *S. mansoni* worms caused by ruthenium complexes. I: control parasites; II: parasites treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri.

#### **2.3.4 *In vitro* effect of ruthenium complexes on *S. mansoni* egg hatching and development**

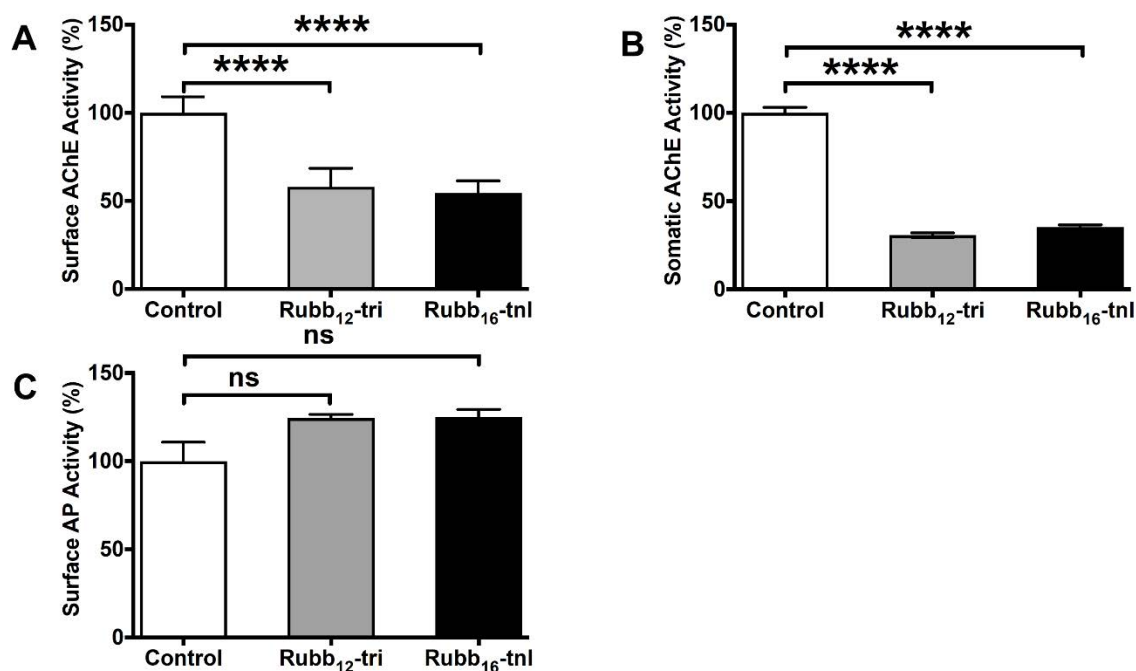
*S. mansoni* egg hatching in the presence (50  $\mu$ M) of ruthenium complexes was investigated by measuring the motility index of hatched miracidia from eggs using the xWORM assay (Fig 2.4A). Significant reduction in hatching/motility was observed for 9/13 compounds tested. Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tnl was the most effective, reducing the motility index by 67% ( $P < 0.0001$ ). To analyze the effect of ruthenium complexes on egg development, the eggs released from worms incubated for 3 days in the presence of 5  $\mu$ M Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri were scored for morphology. Eggs released from treated worms were abnormally developed (immature or misshapen) compared to controls (Fig 2.4B;  $P < 0.01$ ).



**Fig 2.4. Inhibition of *S. mansoni* egg hatching and effect on egg development by ruthenium complexes. (A)** Graph representing the percentage of *S. mansoni* eggs hatched (motility index) in the presence of various ruthenium complexes (50  $\mu$ M) as determined by the x-WORM motility assay. Data represents the average of triplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM. **(B)** Triplicate sets of five pairs of adult *S. mansoni* worms were cultured in Basch media with or without 5  $\mu$ M Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri for 72 h. The eggs released into the media were counted and those that were misshapen or immature were scored as “abnormally developed”. Graph shows the difference in percentage of normally developed eggs between treated and control groups and data represents the average of triplicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM. Differences in egg hatching were measured by ANOVA and differences in egg development by t test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ , \*\*\*\* $P \leq 0.0001$ .

### 2.3.5 Mechanism of anti-schistosome action of $\text{Rubb}_{12}\text{-tri}$ and $\text{Rubb}_{16}\text{-tnl}$

Adult worms were cultured in the presence of sub-lethal concentrations (5  $\mu\text{M}$ ) of  $\text{Rubb}_{12}\text{-tri}$  or  $\text{Rubb}_{16}\text{-tnl}$  - the two ruthenium compounds deemed to be most effective at killing adult parasites – for 24 h and then examined for changes in surface and somatic *SmAChE* activity and glucose uptake (given this pathway can be ablated by an organophosphorus AChE inhibitor). Treated worms showed significantly decreased levels of surface and somatic *SmAChE* activity in the presence of each complex (Fig 2.5A and 2.5B) however, consistent with enzyme inhibition experiments using parasite extracts, AP activity was not significantly affected (Fig 2.5C).

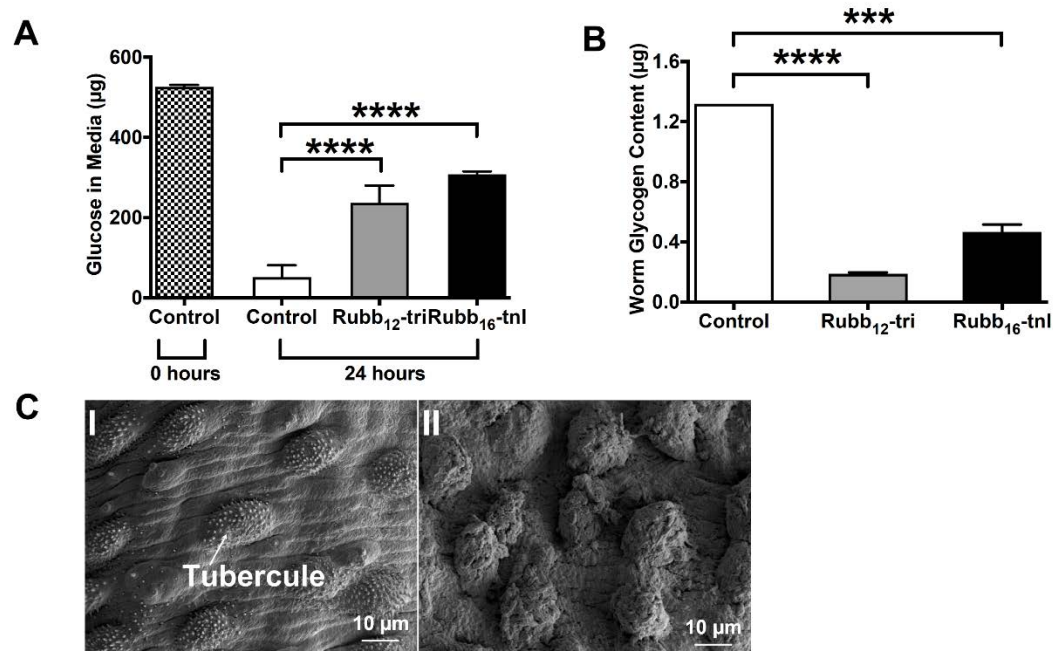


**Fig 2.5. Action of  $\text{Rubb}_{12}\text{-tri}$  and  $\text{Rubb}_{16}\text{-tnl}$  on adult *SmAChE* and *SmAP* activity.**

Five pairs of worms were cultured in Basch media for 24 h in the presence of a sub-lethal dose (5  $\mu\text{M}$ ) of  $\text{Rubb}_{12}\text{-tri}$  or  $\text{Rubb}_{16}\text{-tnl}$  and then incubated in AChE assay buffer or AP assay buffer. PBS extracts were then made from equal amounts of control and treated worms and 30  $\mu\text{g}$  of each

extract was used to determine somatic *SmAChE* activity by the Ellman method. **(A)** Surface *SmAChE* **(B)** somatic *SmAChE* and **(C)** surface *SmAP* activity of control worms and worms treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl. For all assays, data are the average of triplicate biological and technical experiments  $\pm$  SEM. Differences were measured by ANOVA. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ , \*\*\*\*  $P \leq 0.0001$ .

The amount of glucose in the media of parasites treated with either complex was significantly higher than control worms (Fig 2.6A), suggestive of impaired glucose uptake in the presence of ruthenium compounds. Consistent with these results, extracts of treated parasites had a significantly lower glycogen content compared to controls (Fig 2.6B). Moreover, scanning electron micrographs of the tegument of male parasites treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl showed the dorsal tubercles (a site of glycogen storage (Bueding et al. 1967)) to be withered and flattened (Fig 2.6C).



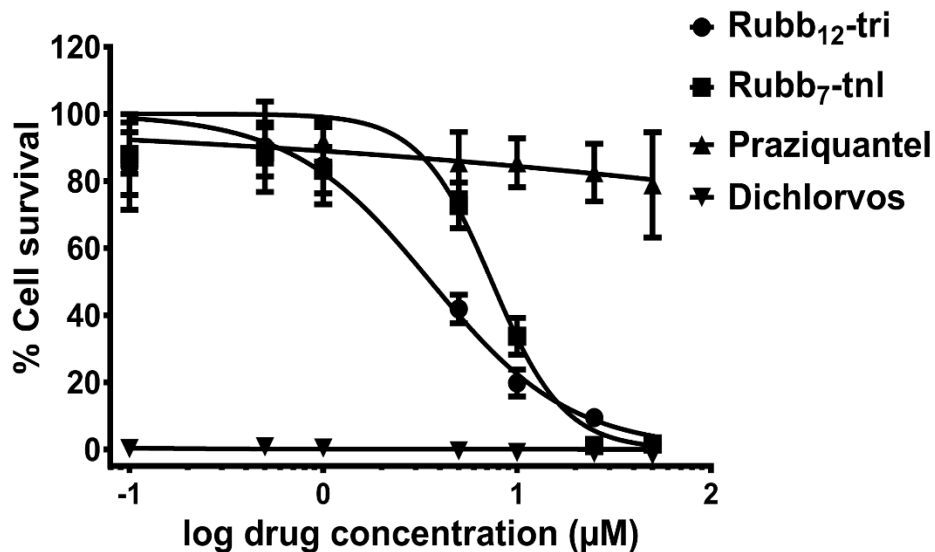
**Fig 2.6. Effect of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl on adult *S. mansoni* glucose uptake and storage ability.**

Worms were cultured in Basch media for 24 h in the presence of a sub-lethal dose (5 µM) of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl. Worms were then incubated for 24 h in DMEM containing 1 mg/ml glucose. PBS extracts were then made from equal amounts of control and treated worms and 30 µg of each extract was used to determine the glycogen content of the worms using a modified glucose oxidase assay. **(A)** Amount of glucose in media collected from control and treated *S. mansoni* worms. **(B)** Levels of glycogen in extracts made from control and treated *S. mansoni* worms. For all assays, data are the average of triplicate biological and technical experiments ± SEM. Differences were measured by ANOVA. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ , \*\*\*\* $P \leq 0.0001$ . **(C)** Scanning electron micrographs of adult male *S. mansoni* worm tegument after incubation with 5 µM Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri; (I) intact tubercles of control worms; (II) withered tubercles of treated worms.



### 2.3.6 Toxicity of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl

The toxicity of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl, two of the ruthenium complexes shown to have high *in vitro* efficacy against all schistosome stages tested, was assessed against human bile duct cells and in male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) before investigating their *in vivo* efficacy in a mouse model of schistosomiasis. PZQ and DDVP - a metabolite of the anti-schistosome AChE inhibitor metrifonate – were included in the study for comparison. When Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl were used at 5  $\mu$ M, a concentration where they significantly inhibited surface and somatic *SmAChE* activity and glucose uptake in adult worms, cell viability was 42% and 73% for Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl, respectively. The EC<sub>50</sub> values of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl were calculated as  $3.489 \pm 0.532 \mu$ M and  $6.829 \pm 0.625 \mu$ M, respectively. DDVP was highly toxic to the cells, killing 100% of the cells even at 0.1  $\mu$ M (Fig 2.7). To determine the MTD in mice, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl was administered to groups of male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks). Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl did not show any toxicity even after five consecutive daily injections (the proposed dosage frequency of the *in vivo* drug efficacy study) of 10 mg/kg (mice were adversely affected at doses of 20 mg/kg) and so the MTD of Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl was considered to be at least 10 mg/kg. The MTD of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, using the same dosage frequency, was determined to be 2 mg/kg (mice were adversely affected at doses of 4 mg/kg). If 100% bioavailability is assumed due to i.v. administration, the host bloodstream concentrations of Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl and Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri at the MTD can be approximated at 12  $\mu$ M and 49  $\mu$ M, respectively.



**Fig 2.7. Cytotoxicity of ruthenium complexes.**

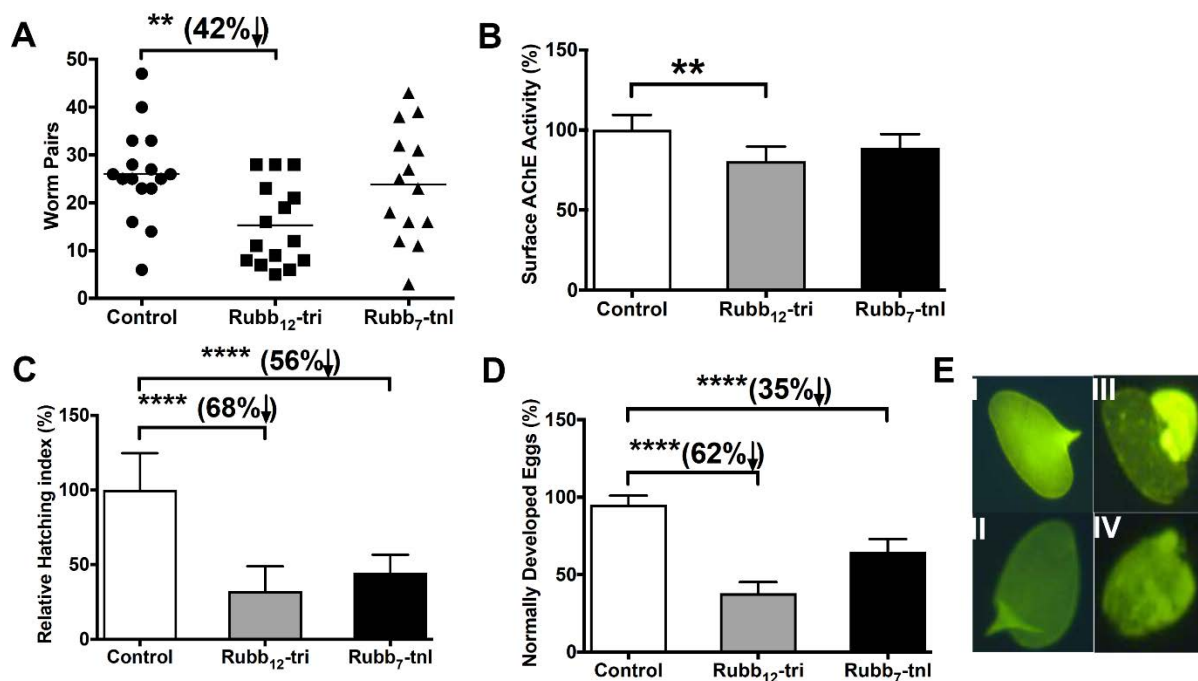
Toxicity against human bile duct cells (H69) after 72 h incubation with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri or Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl, PZQ and DDVP – an organophosphate AChE inhibitor - as determined by the MTT cell viability assay.

Data are the average of six replicate experiments  $\pm$  SEM.

### 2.3.7 *In vivo* efficacy of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl

Over two independent trials, a significant reduction in worm burden (42%,  $P = 0.009$ ) was seen in mice treated with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri compared to controls whereas a non-significant trend towards decreased worm burden was observed in Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated mice (Fig 2.8A). Surface *SmAChE* activity was decreased in worms collected from mice treated with ruthenium complexes but only reached significance for Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated animals (Fig 2.8B). Surface *SmNPP5*, surface *SmAP*, somatic *SmAChE* and glucose uptake activity was not significantly different.

Although there was no decrease in parasite egg burden (as determined by recovery of ova from the liver), the viability of these eggs from trial 1 was examined and highly significant ( $P < 0.0001$ ) reductions in hatching capability (68% and 56%) were observed for the Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri- and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated mice, respectively (Fig 2.8C). Egg hatching viability was not determined for trial 2. Moreover, eggs released from worms recovered from treated mice (trial 2) were significantly different ( $P < 0.0001$ ) in terms of their development (immature, misshapen, eggshell malformation) compared to those from parasites recovered from control mice (Fig 2.8D and 2.8E). Morphology of eggs released from worms recovered from mice in trial 1 was not determined.



**Fig 2.8.** *In vivo* effect of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl on *S. mansoni*-infected mice.

**(A)** Effect of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl on adult worm burden. Symbols represent data from individual mice and are the combination of two independent trials (trial 1 PBS control – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 8 mice, trial 1 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 6 mice, trial 2 PBS control – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 7 mice, trial 2 Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 8 mice). **(B)** Surface *SmAChE* activity of worms recovered from control and treated mice. Data are the average of triplicate technical assays  $\pm$  SEM on extracts made from worms (five pairs) pooled from each group of each of the two trials. **(C)** Hatching viability of eggs obtained from the pooled livers of control and treated mice from trial 1 (PBS control – n = 8, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated – n = 8, Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 6). Data are the average of ten replicate counts  $\pm$  SEM of hatched miracidia. **(D)** Eggs were harvested from triplicate sets of worms (five pairs) from a pool of each group of trial 2 (PBS control – n = 7 mice, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated - n = 7 mice, Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated – n = 8 mice) after culturing the

parasites for 24 h in Basch media and the percentage of mature, morphologically “normal” eggs released from worms recovered from control and treated mice was assessed. Data are the average counts  $\pm$  SEM of eggs released from triplicate sets (five pairs) of worms from trial 2. Differences were measured by ANOVA.  $*P \leq 0.05$ ,  $**P \leq 0.01$ ,  $***P \leq 0.001$ ,  $**** P \leq 0.0001$ . (E) Auto-fluorescence images (20 $\times$ ) of eggs released from worms recovered from (I and II) control and (III and IV) treated mice.

## 2.4 Discussion

Control of schistosomiasis, a neglected tropical disease which affects over 200 million people, relies on periodic treatment with single drug, PZQ, a strategy that is unsustainable in its current form (Seto et al. 2011; Wang et al. 2012; Vale et al. 2017). As no new anti-schistosome drug (or any anti-parasitic) has been registered in the last decade (Pedrique et al. 2013), the need for additional therapeutic compounds has become unquestionable and has driven research efforts towards the discovery of alternative anti-schistosome chemotherapies, including those derived from natural products (Wangchuk et al. 2016) and metal-based compounds (Kuntz et al. 2007). Accordingly, this study has described the anti-schistosome efficacy of a series of mono- and multi-nucleated metal-based compounds (ruthenium complexes) which exert their action through the inhibition of AChE, an enzyme pivotal to the control of worm neuromuscular function and implicated in the mediation of host glucose scavenging (Camacho et al. 1995; Arnon et al. 1999).

It has been previously shown that mononuclear ruthenium complexes inhibit AChE (*E. electricus*) by a non-competitive or mixed mode of inhibition (Vyas et al. 2014). However, in the present study, the trinuclear complex (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri) displayed a competitive mode of inhibition in the kinetic experiments. The mononuclear polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes are thought to interact with the peripheral anionic site (PAS) of AChE located at the rim of the active-center gorge through a combination of electrostatic and hydrophobic interactions (Meggers 2009). The tri- and tetra-nuclear complexes showed greater activity compared to mononuclear complexes, presumably due to the presence of the flexibly-linked multiple metal centers which may provide more interactions (electrostatic and hydrophobic) with the PAS, or each individual center may contribute nonspecific additional points of contact. The activity of the ruthenium complexes varied in extracts made from different life stages (adult extracts and SEA) and various species of the parasite which is most likely due to differences in enzyme orthologs and the existence of multiple paralogs at least in *S. mansoni* (Chapter 3) which are present in different life stages and species (Arnon et al. 1999).

Encouraged by the activity of ruthenium complexes against parasite extracts, selected compounds were tested against all three intra-mammalian stages of the parasite *in vitro* and found similar trends in anti-parasite activity as was seen for extracts; i.e., the tri- and tetra-nucleated complexes were more effective against each stage of the parasite than the mono- and di-nuclear compounds. Three of the most effective compounds in terms of their combined activity against *S. mansoni* extracts and all intra-mammalian stages were Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri

and Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl. Further, Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri was also the most effective at inhibiting AChE activity in *S. haematobium* extracts; availability of material prevented us from doing any experiments on live parasites or eggs but I believe that the similar trends observed between *S. mansoni* anti-parasitic activity and extract activity hold true for *S. haematobium* and ruthenium complexes such as Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri would display potent anti-schistosome activity against this species. Further, *S. haematobium* has higher levels of tegumental AChE than *S. mansoni*, which makes the parasite more sensitive to AChE inhibitors (Camacho et al. 1994) and might render this species more vulnerable to ruthenium drugs.

Any differences observed between the AChE-inhibitory ability and anti-schistosome effect of ruthenium complexes could be due to the target of these drugs not solely being AChE. While I showed that ruthenium complexes did not have any inhibitory effects on the major tegumental enzymes *SmNPP5* and *SmAP*, these drugs have been documented to act as dual inhibitors of telomerase and topoisomerase (Liao et al. 2015), thioredoxin reductase (Luo et al. 2014) and protein and lipid kinases (Meggers 2009). There are numerous reports in the literature documenting the development of drug resistance in parasites due to mutation (for example, benzimidazole resistance in nematodes due to single nucleotide polymorphisms in  $\beta$ -tubulin (Von Samson-Himmelstjerna et al. 2007) and mutation of a schistosome sulfotransferase resulting in resistance to oxamniquine (Valentim et al. 2013), and so the use of a drug that is directed against multiple molecular targets may decrease the chance of resistance evolving.

Visually, the effects of the compounds were most pronounced against adult worms, which became immobile and coiled when incubated with ruthenium complexes, possibly due to paralysis induced by *SmAChE* inhibition and cholinergic accumulation, effects similarly seen in schistosomes treated with other inhibitors of *SmAChE* (Bueding et al. 1972; Hillman et al. 1975; Pax et al. 1981). This observation should be treated with caution, however, as other drugs, such as PZQ (which is not a *SmAChE* inhibitor), induce the same morphological changes. Additional evidence of the mechanistic effects of ruthenium complexes on schistosomes manifested in the reduced glucose uptake observed in drug-treated worms, potentially a consequence of inhibiting the tegumental *SmAChE*-mediated regulation of host glucose scavenging, a pathway unique to schistosomes (Camacho et al. 1995). Further confirmation of this inhibition was evidenced by significantly depleted glycogen stores (quantified in parasite extracts and observed by the withering of male tubercles – a site of glycogen storage (Bueding et al. 1967)) in these parasites, an effect seen in worms recovered from mice treated with carbamate-based AChE inhibitors (Bueding et al. 1967). In another example of tegument-mediated glucose regulation, previous work by You and colleagues (You et al. 2010) has shown that inhibition of schistosome insulin receptor activity significantly decreased glucose uptake by the parasite. It would be interesting to explore any relationship that existed between these two regulatory mechanisms, a possibility given the alternative is to imagine the evolution of two mechanistically distinct pathways of glucose regulation. Additionally, a combination chemotherapeutic strategy could be developed using drugs which target different aspects of schistosome glucose uptake.



Two of the ruthenium complexes which were considered most effective *in vitro* (Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl) were tested for cytotoxicity before assessment of their *in vivo* efficacy in a mouse model of schistosomiasis. Rubb<sub>16</sub>-tnl, even though effective *in vitro*, was not included in the cytotoxicity assay or the *in vivo* study as earlier work by us has shown that ruthenium complexes with longer chain lengths are more toxic to eukaryotic cells (Gorle et al. 2016). Both ruthenium complexes tested, Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl and Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri, exhibited lower cytotoxicity against eukaryotic cells (H69) compared to DDVP, an organophosphorus AChE inhibitor and previously licensed, but now withdrawn anti-schistosome drug. Further, studies comparing AChE from schistosomes and higher eukaryotes (Jones et al. 2002; Bentley et al. 2003) reveal differences in functionally important amino acid residues (human AChE shares 33-36% primary sequence homology across all schistosome AChEs) with the active site serine conserved across species. It was previously shown that DDVP covalently binds to the active site serine and reduces the AChE activity in eukaryotes (e.g., in rat forebrain, erythrocytes and plasma) (Hinz et al. 1996; Jann 1998). By contrast, it was considered that the ruthenium complexes might be relatively less toxic to mice than DDVP due to the differential binding to AChE. The results of the MTD study, where both the ruthenium complexes were well tolerated by mice, supported this argument.

Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl both showed promising *in vivo* efficacy at doses which were equivalent to lethal *in vitro* concentrations yet well tolerated in mice, with Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri-treated mice showing a significant reduction in worm burden and recovered worms displaying a small but significant decrease in tegumental AChE activity, providing evidence that the anti-schistosome effect may

be partially due to AChE inhibition. Studies by us on di-nuclear ruthenium complexes have shown the compounds to have a short serum half-life (Li et al. 2017), and the different *in vivo* efficacies of each complex in this study may be attributed to differences in the pharmacokinetic/pharmacodynamic (PK/PD) properties of Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl. Although these experiments have yet to be performed, the differences exhibited between these two compounds in the cytotoxicity assay and tolerability study suggests that their PK/PD are not the same. Despite no significant reduction in egg burden in both trials, ova recovered from both Rubb<sub>12</sub>-tri- and Rubb<sub>7</sub>-tnl-treated mice had significantly reduced hatching ability and were morphologically abnormal compared to controls, in agreement with *in vitro* data. That there was no decrease in egg burden in light of a reduced worm load in either treated group was surprising, but this did result in an increase in the number of eggs per female in these groups, compared to controls. To explain these observations, I postulate that treatment with ruthenium drugs may stimulate schistosome reproductive tract motility (AChE inhibitors have been shown to stimulate gastrointestinal motility in various organisms (De Giorgio et al. 2004; McNamara et al. 2008)), resulting in premature release of under-developed eggs, and have a direct effect on egg formation, resulting in abnormally developed eggs (studies in ticks have shown that treatment with AChE inhibitors effect ova development (Perez-Gonzalez et al. 2014; Prado-Ochoa et al. 2014)). Another possible factor contributing to abnormal egg development is that the worms are under-nourished due an impaired glucose uptake ability (albeit an effect that could only measure *in vitro*) resulting from ruthenium drug treatment and unable to meet the energetically demanding task of producing normally developed ova. There is considerable interest in the use

of agents that show ovicidal activity or affect oviposition to control schistosomiasis due to their ability to block transmission of the disease. In this regard, ruthenium complexes offer a potential advantage over PZQ in that it is only effective against mature worms and so cannot be used to interrupt disease transmission, as evidenced by high rates of re-infection in PZQ-treated endemic populations (Webster et al. 2013).

So far, this is the first report detailing the anti-parasitic activity of ruthenium complexes and this work has identified some lead anti-schistosome compounds. The modular nature of ruthenium complexes makes it possible to synthesize these compounds to target specific enzymes, so future work will involve tailoring Ru complexes to increase their selectivity and potency. Finally, these complexes could be administered in combination with PZQ, overcoming the limitations of current monotherapy and augmenting existing schistosomiasis control initiatives.

## CHAPTER 3

---

### Characterization of novel cholinesterase paralogs of *Schistosoma mansoni*

---

### 3.1 Introduction

The functioning of the nervous system is a tightly regulated process controlled through multiple catalytic and non-catalytic signaling molecules. Among the catalytic molecules, cholinesterases (ChEs) play a pivotal role in regulating the signaling activity of the nervous system. There are two major types of ChEs, acetylcholinesterase (AChE) and pseudocholinesterase, or butyrylcholinesterase (BChE), and they can be distinguished both kinetically and pharmacologically (Girard et al. 2007). AChE selectively hydrolyzes the neurotransmitter acetylcholine (ACh) to maintain neurotransmitter homeostasis (You et al. 2017) while the main role of BChE is widely accepted to be the detoxification of organophosphorus esters which are inhibitors of AChE (Lockridge 2015). ChEs are generally believed to be functionally redundant in cholinergic signaling with the main differences between paralogs lying in their spatial and temporal expression as well as non-cholinergic functionality (Soreq et al. 2001; Silman et al. 2005).

While AChE activity has been previously reported in different schistosomes (Arnon et al. 1999), “pre-genomic” studies have documented only one AChE-encoding gene in each species (Bentley et al. 2003; Bentley et al. 2005). Moreover, to the best of our knowledge, genes encoding proteins with BChE activity have not been previously described in schistosomes or any other helminth. Interrogation of the now fully annotated *S. mansoni* genome (Berriman et al. 2009) has revealed three different *SmChE* paralogs; however, their individual contributions to ChE function remain unknown.

Traditionally, parasite ChEs have been regarded solely as neurotransmitter terminators; however, there is increasing data to suggest that these enzymes play a variety of roles within the cells that extend beyond this cholinergic function (Soreq et al. 2001; Silman et al. 2005; Paraoanu et al. 2008; Zhang et al. 2012). In schistosomes, the most prominent among these is in the uptake of glucose by the parasite from the external environment (Camacho et al. 1995). One of the proposed mechanisms is by limiting the interaction of host ACh with tegumental nicotinic ACh receptors (nAChRs) thus availing surplus glucose (Camacho et al. 1995; Camacho et al. 1995). The nAChRs are also associated both spatially and temporally with surface AChE expression and are concentrated on the tegument (Camacho et al. 1995), the primary site of glucose uptake (Skelly et al. 2014).

Many intestinal nematodes secrete AChE (Rathaur et al. 1987; Lawrence et al. 1993; Hussein et al. 2002; Hussein et al. 2002; Selkirk et al. 2005; Selkirk et al. 2005; Hewitson et al. 2013), which play a vital role in both cholinergic and non-cholinergic activities. For instance, emerging evidence suggests that AChE promote parasite survival not only by inhibiting the host cholinergic signaling resulting in inhibition of muscle contraction (Selkirk et al. 2005) but also by altering host cytokine profiles which suppress the development of M2 macrophages (Vaux et al. 2016). Despite this breadth of literature in nematodes, there has been no documentation of secreted AChE activity from schistosomes.

In this chapter, two novel ChEs from *S. mansoni* (*SmChEs*): *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3* have been identified and functionally characterized, in addition to further characterizing the only previously identified AChE-encoding gene from *S. mansoni* (Bentley et al. 2003; Bentley et al. 2005), which I have termed *SmAChE1*. In a first for schistosomes, *SmChE* activity in ES (excretory and secretory) products of the parasite have also been documented and partially characterized. Finally, evidence is provided that the novel *SmBChE1* may act as a competitive binder of AChE inhibitors to detoxify the effects of these molecules.

## **3.2 Material and Methods**

### **3.2.1 Ethics statement**

All experimental procedures reported in the study were approved by the James Cook University (JCU) animal ethics committee (ethics approval numbers A2271 and A2391). Mice were maintained in cages in the university's quarantine facility (Q2152) for the duration of the experiments. The study protocols were in accordance with the 2007 Australian Code of Practice for the Care and Use of Animals for Scientific Purposes and the 2001 Queensland Animal Care and Protection Act.

### **3.2.2 Parasite maintenance, culture and ES collection**

*Biomphalaria glabrata* snails infected with *S. mansoni* (NMRI strain) were obtained from the Biomedical Research Institute (BRI). Cercariae were shed from infected snails through exposure to light at 28°C for 1.5 h and were mechanically transformed into schistosomula (Ramalho-Pinto

et al. 1974). To obtain adult *S. mansoni* worms, 6-8 week old male BALB/c mice (Animal Resource Centre, WA) were infected with 180 cercariae via tail penetration and adults were harvested by vascular perfusion at 7-8 weeks post-infection (Lewis et al. 1986). Both adult worms and schistosomula were cultured (10 adult pairs/ml and 2000 schistosomula/ml, respectively, at 37°C and 5% CO<sub>2</sub> in serum-free modified Basch medium (Basch 1981) supplemented with 4× antibiotic/antimycotic (AA - 200 units/ml penicillin, 200 µg/ml streptomycin and 0.5 µg/ml amphotericin B) in 6 well plates. Media, containing ES products, was initially collected after 24 h (adults) and 3 h (schistosomula) and then harvested and replenished daily and stored at -80°C. Media was thawed when needed, pooled if required, concentrated through Amicon centrifugation filters (Sigma) with a 3 kDa molecular weight cutoff (MWCO) and buffer exchanged into phosphate buffered saline, pH 7.4 (PBS). Concentrated ES products were then quantified using the Pierce BCA™ Protein Assay kit (ThermoFisher), aliquoted and stored at -80°C. To collect cercarial ES, freshly-shed cercariae were incubated in H<sub>2</sub>O (4000/ml) at 25°C for 3 h. H<sub>2</sub>O was filtered through Whatman filter paper (11 µm) to remove cercariae and ES products were concentrated, quantified and stored as for adult and schistosomula ES.

### **3.2.3 Parasite extract preparation**

To make PBS-soluble extracts, worms were homogenized in PBS (50 µl/adult worm pair or 50 µl/1000 schistosomula) at 4°C using a TissueLyser II (Qiagen), homogenates incubated overnight with mixing at 4°C and the supernatant collected by centrifugation at 15,000 *xg* for 1 h at 4°C. Triton X-100-soluble extracts were made from the PBS-insoluble pellets by resuspension in 1%



Triton X-100, 40 mM Tris-HCl, pH 7.4, mixing overnight at 4°C and the supernatant collected by centrifugation at 15,000 *xg* for 1 h at 4°C. Tegment extraction was achieved using a combination of freeze/thaw/vortex technique (Sotillo et al. 2015). In brief, parasites were slowly thawed on ice, washed in TBS (10 mM Tris/HCl, 0.84% NaCl, pH 7.4) and incubated for 5 min on ice in 10 mM Tris/HCl, pH 7.4 followed by vortexing five times with 1-s bursts. *Subsequently*, the tegumental extract was pelleted at 1000 *xg* for 30 min and solubilized (3x) in 200 µl of 0.1% (w/v) SDS, 1% (v/v) Triton X-100 in 40 mM Tris, pH 7.4 with pelleting at 15,000 *xg* between each wash. Protein concentration was determined using the Pierce BCA Protein Assay kit (Thermofisher), aliquoted and stored at -80°C until use.

### 3.2.4 Bioinformatics studies

Based on Pfam analysis (search = cholinesterase) of the *S. mansoni* genome

(<http://www.geneDB.org/Homepage/Smansoni>), three *SmChE* paralogs (*SmAChE1* - Smp\_154600, *SmBChE1* - Smp\_125350 and *SmAChE3* - Smp\_136690) were identified.

Homologous ChE sequences from other species were identified using BLASTP.

(<http://blast.ncbi.nlm.nih.gov/Blast.cgi>) and the resulting sequences were used to generate a

multiple sequence alignment using Clustal Omega

(<https://www.ebi.ac.uk/Tools/msa/clustalo/>).

MEGA 7 was used to generate a neighbor-joining tree with the Poisson correction distance method and a bootstrap test of 1000 replicates (Kumar et al. 2016). Structure-homology 3D models of *SmChEs* were generated using the I-TASSER server

(<http://zhanglab.ccmb.med.umich.edu/I-TASSER/>). For structure visualization and catalytic triad analyses, the Accelrys Discovery Studio (Accelrys Inc.) and UCSF Chimera MatchMaker ver. 1.4 (University of California) software packages were utilized.

### **3.2.5 Developmental expression analysis of *SmChE* genes by real-time qPCR**

RNA from miracidia, sporocyst, cercariae, adult male worms, adult female worms, and eggs were obtained from BRI. Schistosomula were cultured as described in section 3.2.2, harvested (1000 parasites) after either 3 h, 24 h, 3 or 5 days, washed three times in PBS and stored at -80°C until use. Total RNA extraction from schistosomula stages was performed using the Trizol (Thermofisher) reagent according to manufacturer's instructions. After air-drying, RNA pellets were re-suspended in 12 µl DEPC water. Concentration and purity of RNA was determined using an ND2000 Nanodrop spectrophotometer (Thermofisher). Synthesis of cDNA was carried out using 1 µg of total RNA using Superscript-III-Reverse Transcriptase (Invitrogen) according to the manufacturer's instructions. Finally, cDNA was quantified, diluted to 50 ng/µl, aliquoted and stored at -20°C.

Real-time qPCR primers for each *SmChE* (Supplementary Table 3.1) were designed using Primer3 (<http://frodo.wi.mit.edu/>). *SmCOX1* was selected as an internal control to normalize relative

*SmChE* gene expression (Long et al. 2016). Each qPCR (1  $\mu$ l (50 ng) of cDNA, 5  $\mu$ l of 2x SYBR green master mix (Bioline), 1 $\mu$ l (5 pmol/ $\mu$ l) each of forward and reverse primers and 2  $\mu$ l of nuclease-free water) was run in a Rotor-Gene Q thermal cycler (Qiagen) using 40 cycles of 95°C for 10 seconds, 50-55°C for 15 seconds and 72°C for 20 seconds. Stage-specific *SmChE* gene expression levels were normalized against *SmCOX1* gene expression using the comparative  $2^{-\Delta\Delta CT}$  method (Schmittgen et al. 2008). All results represent the average of five independent experiments with data presented as mean  $\pm$  SEM.

### 3.2.6 Cloning and expression of *SmChE* gene fragments in *E. coli*

Complete ORFs for *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3* were synthesized by GENEWIZ, (<https://www.genewiz.com>). Attempts to express full-length sequences in *E. coli* were unsuccessful, so primer sets incorporating *NdeI* (forward primer) and *XhoI* restriction enzyme sites (reverse primer) were designed (Supplementary Table 3.1) to amplify partial, non-conserved regions of each *SmChE* (p*SmChE*), which might prove more amenable to expression. Sequences for each p*SmChE* were amplified from each full-length template by PCR, amplicons digested by *NdeI* and *XhoI*, ligated into the similarly-digested pET41a expression vector (Novagen) and transformed into *E. coli* DH5 $\alpha$  (Thermofisher) on LB plates supplemented with 50  $\mu$ g/ml kanamycin (LB<sub>kan</sub>). Colonies were screened by PCR and positive transformants were cultured in 5 ml LB<sub>kan</sub> overnight at 37°C and 200 rpm. Plasmids were extracted from each culture by miniprep and recombination confirmed by *NdeI/XhoI* digestion and sequencing using T7 promoter and T7 terminator primers. Plasmids selected for expression were transformed into *E. coli* BL21(DE3)

(Thermofisher) and positive colonies seeded into 2x5 ml LB<sub>kan</sub> and incubated overnight at 37°C and 200 rpm. Overnight starter cultures were diluted 1:100 in 1L of 2YT<sub>kan</sub> broth and cultured at 37°C and 200 rpm. Cells were induced by 1 mM Isopropyl beta-D-1-thiogalactopyranoside (IPTG) when the OD<sub>600</sub> of the cultures reached 1 and further incubated at 37°C for 24 h. Finally, cultures were harvested by centrifugation (8000 *xg* for 20 min at 4°C), re-suspended in 50 ml lysis buffer (50 mM sodium phosphate, pH 8.0, 300 mM NaCl, and 40 mM imidazole) and stored at -80°C.

### 3.2.7 Purification of pSmChEs

Pilot expression experiments showed each pSmChE to be produced in insoluble inclusion bodies (IBs). Cell pellets were lysed by three freeze-thaw cycles at -80°C and 42°C followed by sonication on ice (10 x 5 s pulses [70% amplitude] with 30 s rest periods in between each pulse) with a Qsonica Sonicator. Triton X-100 was added to each lysate at a final concentration of 3% and incubated for 1 h at 4°C with end-over-end mixing. Insoluble material (containing pSmChEs) was pelleted by centrifugation at 20,000 *xg* for 20 min at 4°C. The supernatant was discarded, and IBs were washed twice by resuspension in 30 ml of lysis buffer followed by centrifugation at 20,000 *xg* for 20 min at 4°C. IBs were then solubilized sequentially by resuspension in 25 ml lysis buffers containing either 2 M, 4 M or 8 M urea, end-over-end mixing overnight at 4°C and centrifugation at 20,000 *xg* for 20 min at 4°C. Finally, supernatant containing solubilized IBs were diluted 1:4 in lysis buffer containing 8M urea and filtered through a 0.22 µm membrane (Millipore). Solubilized IBs were purified by immobilized metal affinity chromatography (IMAC) by loading onto a prepacked 1 ml His-Trap HP column (GE Healthcare) equilibrated with lysis buffer containing 8M

urea at a flow rate of 1 ml/min using an AKTA-pure-25 FPLC (GE Healthcare). After washing with 20 ml lysis buffer containing 8M urea, bound His-tagged proteins were eluted using the same buffer with a stepwise gradient of 50-250 mM imidazole (50 mM steps). Fractions containing pSmChEs (as determined by SDS-PAGE) were pooled and concentrated using Amicon Ultra-15 centrifugal devices with a 3 kDa MWCO (Sigma) and quantified using the Pierce BCA Protein Assay kit (Thermofisher). The final concentration of each pSmChE was adjusted to 1 mg/ml and proteins were aliquoted and stored at -80°C.

### **3.2.8 Generation of anti-SmChE antisera and purification of IgG**

Three groups of five male BALB/c mice (6-week-old) were intraperitoneally immunized with either pSmAChE1, pSmBChE1 or pSmAChE3 subunits (50 µg/mouse). Antigens were mixed with an equal volume of Imject alum adjuvant (Thermofisher) and administered three times, two weeks apart. Two weeks after the final immunization, mice were sacrificed and blood was collected via cardiac puncture. Blood from all mice in each group was pooled and serum was separated by centrifugation after clotting and stored at -20°C. Polyclonal antibodies were purified from mouse sera by using Protein A Sepharose-4B (Thermofisher) according to manufacturer's instructions. Serum from naïve mice was similarly processed.

### **3.2.9 Immunolocalization using anti-SmChE antisera**

**Adult worm sections:** Freshly perfused adult *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* worms were fixed in 4% paraformaldehyde, embedded in paraffin and sections (7 µm thick) were cut in a cryostat.

Following deparaffinization in xylene and rehydration in an ethanol series, antigen retrieval was performed by boiling the slides in 10 mM sodium citrate, pH 6.0, for 40 min followed by a solution of 10 mM Tris, 1 mM EDTA, 0.05% Tween, pH 9.0, for 20 min. All sections were then blocked with 10% heat-inactivated goat serum for 1 h RT. After washing 3 times with PBST, sections were incubated with anti-*SmAChE1*, anti-*SmBChE1*, anti-*SmAChE3*, naïve sera (negative control), *S. mansoni* or *S. haematobium* infected sera (positive controls) (1:50 in PBST) overnight at 4°C and then washed again (3x5 min each). Finally, the sections were incubated with Goat-anti-mouse IgG-alexafuor647 (Sigma) (1:200 in PBST) for 1 h in the dark at RT. After a final washing step, slides were mounted with coverslips in Entellan mounting medium (Millipore). Fluorescence and bright-field microscopy were performed with an AxioImager M1 fluorescence microscope (Zeiss) using 10x and 20x objectives.

***Live schistosomula:*** *In vitro*-cultured living cercariae and schistosomula (3 h, 24 h, 3 and 5 days old) larvae were harvested and washed with PBS and then blocked with PBST/10% heat-inactivated goat serum for 30 min at RT. Following three washes, the larvae were incubated with anti-*SmAChE1*, anti-*SmBChE1*, anti-*SmAChE3* or naïve serum (negative control) (1:100 in PBST) overnight at 4°C. Parasites were washed again before incubation with Goat-anti-mouse IgG-alexafuor647 (Sigma) (1: 200 in PBST) for 1 h in the dark at RT, followed by 3 washes. Finally, schistosomes were fixed in 4% paraformaldehyde and transferred to a microscopic slide for fluorescence microscopy using an AxioImager M1 fluorescence microscope (Zeiss).

### 3.2.10 Cloning and expression of full-length *SmChEs* in *P. pastoris*

Specific primer sets containing flanking *EcoRI* and *XbaI* sites were designed to amplify full-length sequences (minus the signal peptide) of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3* (f*SmChEs*). Amplicons were then digested and cloned in-frame with the  $\alpha$ -factor secretion signal peptide into the C-terminal 6XHis tagged pPICZ $\alpha$ A expression vector (Invitrogen). The constructs were then transformed into *E. coli* DH5 $\alpha$  cells (ThermoFisher), plated onto LB agar plates supplemented with 25  $\mu$ g/ml of zeocin (LB<sub>zeo</sub>) and incubated overnight at 37°C. Recombinant colonies were confirmed by colony PCR and used to inoculate 5 ml LB<sub>zeo</sub> which were grown overnight at 37°C and 200 rpm. Plasmids were extracted by mini-prep and recombination verified by both restriction digestion and sequencing.

Recombinant plasmids (20  $\mu$ g) were linearized with *PmeI* (f*SmAChE1* & f*SmBChE1*) and *SacI* (f*SmAChE3*) for 3 h at 37°C, purified by ethanol precipitation and resuspended in 15  $\mu$ l of H<sub>2</sub>O. Linearized vectors were electroporated according to manufacturer's instructions into *P. pastoris* X-33 cells (ThermoFisher) in 2 mm cuvettes (2 ms, 2000V, 25  $\mu$ F, 200  $\Omega$ , square wave pulse), using a Gene Pulser Xcell (Bio-Rad), plated onto YPDS agar plates containing 100  $\mu$ g/ml zeocin, covered in foil and incubated for 3 days at 30°C. Resultant colonies were then picked and patched onto YPDS agar containing 2 mg/ml zeocin and plates incubated at 30°C until colonies were visible. Integration of the recombinant cassette into the *P. pastoris* chromosome was confirmed by colony PCR. For each integrated *SmChE*, ten PCR-positive colonies were selected for pilot expression studies and each seeded into 3 ml of BMGY in 50 ml falcon tubes and incubated

overnight at 30°C with shaking at 250 rpm. Cells were pelleted (5000  $xg$  for 20 min at RT), re-suspended in 6 ml BMMY to induce protein expression and incubated at 30°C with shaking at 250 rpm. Methanol was added to 0.5% at 24, 48 and 72 h after media replacement to maintain protein induction. At these timepoints, 500  $\mu$ l samples of culture media were taken and analyzed for protein expression by standard Western blotting techniques using an anti-His antibody and *SmChE*-specific polyclonal antibodies (generated in section 3.2.8).

The highest-expressing *P. pastoris* culture (determined from the pilot expression experiments) of each f*SmChE* was plated onto YPD agar supplemented with 50  $\mu$ g/ml zeocin and incubated for 2 days at 30°C. A single colony was used to inoculate 5 ml BMGY media (supplemented with 50  $\mu$ g/ml zeocin) which was grown overnight at 30°C and 250 rpm. The entire culture was then used to inoculate 250 ml of BMGY in a 2L baffled flask and incubation was continued for 24 h. Cells were pelleted at 5000  $xg$  for 20 min at RT, re-suspended in 1L of BMMY and split between 2 x 2L baffled flasks, which were incubated with shaking (250 rpm) at 30°C for 72 h. Methanol was added to a final concentration of 0.5% (2.5 ml/flask) every 24 h. Culture medium containing the secreted f*SmChE* proteins were harvested by centrifugation (5000  $xg$  for 20 min at RT) and filtered through a 0.22  $\mu$ m membrane filter (Millipore). Recombinant proteins were purified by IMAC using the AKTA-pure-25 FPLC (GE Healthcare). Briefly, culture medium was loaded onto a 5 ml His-excel column, pre-equilibrated with binding buffer (50 mM PBS pH 7.4, 300 mM NaCl), washed with 20 column volumes of binding buffer and then eluted with binding buffer containing a linear imidazole gradient (20 to 500 mM). The purity of fractions within the main peak was



analyzed by standard SDS-and fractions of appropriate purity were pooled, concentrated and buffer exchanged into PBS using Amicon Ultra-15 centrifugal devices with a 3 kDa MWCO (Millipore) and quantified using the Pierce BCA Protein Assay kit (Thermofisher). The final concentration of each fSmChE was adjusted to 1 mg/ml) and proteins were aliquoted and stored at -80°C. Finally, the recombinant proteins were confirmed by SDS-PAGE and Western blotting with anti-His (anti-His-HRP) (Invitrogen) and anti-SmChEs antibodies (generated in section 3.2.8).

### 3.2.11 SmChE Enzyme Assays

Activity of fSmChEs, extracts and ES samples was determined by the Ellman method (Ellman et al. 1961); modified for use with 96 well microplates. Samples (parasite extracts, ES and fSmChEs) were diluted in assay buffer (0.1M sodium phosphate, pH 7.4), and 2 mM acetylthiocholine (AcSCh) or butyrylthiocholine (BcSCh) (Sigma) and 0.5 mM 5, 5'-dithio-bis (2-nitrobenzoic acid) (DTNB) (Sigma) was added. The absorbance increase was monitored every 5 min at 405 nm in a Polarstar Omega microplate reader (BMG Labtech). Specific activity was calculated using the initial velocity of the reaction and extinction coefficient of  $13260 \text{ M}^{-1} \text{ cm}^{-1}$  for TNB. To investigate sensitivity of parasite ES products to AChE inhibitors, 25  $\mu\text{g}$  of adult ES was pre-treated with 1  $\mu\text{M}$  Dichlorvos (DDVP) - active metabolite of the organophosphorus AChE inhibitor metrifonate - for 20 min at RT before measuring activity. Kinetic parameters of fSmChEs were characterized by measuring enzyme activity at differing substrate concentrations and plotting enzyme activity [V] vs. substrate concentration [S]. The  $K_m$  ([S] at  $1/2 V_{max}$ ) was calculated using the Michaelis Menton equation. Substrate concentration was plotted against reaction rate to check whether

the enzymes obeyed Michaelis–Menten kinetics and  $K_m$  and  $V_{max}$  were determined from a Lineweaver–Burk plot. Enzyme assays with inhibitors were performed as above except that fSmChEs in assay buffer were pre-treated with 1  $\mu$ M DDVP, in the case of fSmAChE1 and fSmAChE3, or (1 mM) iso-OMPA – a membrane-impermeable specific BChE inhibitor, in the case of fSmBChE1, for another 20 min at RT. Experiments were performed in triplicate with data presented as the mean  $\pm$  SEM.

### **3.2.12 Purification of secreted SmChEs from adult *S. mansoni* ES products**

Affinity chromatography using edrophonium chloride-sepharose was used to purify SmAChE from *S. mansoni* based on the method of (Hodgson et al. 1983). Briefly, 1 g of epoxy-activated sepharose 6B beads were washed with distilled H<sub>2</sub>O, the slurry centrifuged at 814  $xg$  for 5 min and the pellet gently resuspended in 50 mM sodium phosphate, pH 8.0, containing 200 mM edrophonium chloride (1:2 ratio of sepharose:edrophonium chloride). The pH of the solution was adjusted to 10.0 and coupling of edrophonium with the sepharose was facilitated by incubating the mixture overnight with shaking at 50°C. The gel was then washed sequentially with 10 volumes each of 100 mM sodium acetate, pH 4.5, 12 mM sodium borate, pH 10.0, and distilled H<sub>2</sub>O and finally resuspended in distilled H<sub>2</sub>O to generate a 1 ml gel slurry. The gel slurry was packed into a chromatography column (10 cm long, 1 cm diameter) and equilibrated by gravity flow at 4°C with 10 column volumes (CV) of equilibration buffer (50 mM phosphate buffer, pH 8.0). Approximately 20 ml of ES from adult *S. mansoni* (concentrated through a 10Kda MWCO centrifugal filter from a starting volume of 500 ml of media, harvested each day for 7 days from

100 pairs of adult worms and buffer exchanged into equilibration buffer) was added to the column followed by washes with 20 CV of equilibration buffer and 20 CV of equilibration buffer containing 500 mM NaCl. Bound *SmChE* was then eluted with 10 CV of equilibration buffer containing 500 mM NaCl and 20 mM edrophonium chloride. The eluate was concentrated and buffer exchanged into PBS using a 10Kda MWCO centrifugal filter (edrophonium chloride is an AChE inhibitor and would interfere with subsequent activity assays) and resolved by 10% SDS-PAGE to check purity and facilitate identification by mass spectrometry.

### **3.2.13 Mass spectrometric analysis of purified, secretory *SmChE***

Bands of interest were manually excised from the gel, washed with 50% acetonitrile and dried under vacuum at 30°C. Cysteine residues were, then, reduced with 20 mM DTT for 1 h at 65°C followed by alkylation with 50 mM iodoacetamide for 40 min at 37°C in the dark. In-gel trypsin digestion was performed at 37°C overnight with 0.8 ng of trypsin in trypsin reaction buffer (40 mM ammonium bicarbonate, 9% acetonitrile). The supernatant was removed to a fresh Eppendorf tube and stored at 4°C, and the remaining peptides were further extracted from the gel pieces by incubation with 0.1% trifluoroacetic acid (TFA) at 37°C for 45 min. The newly extracted supernatant was combined with the previously collected supernatant, then dried under vacuum. Prior to the matrix-assisted laser desorption/ionization-time-of-flight mass spectrometry (MALDI-TOF MS) analysis, peptides were concentrated and desalted using ZipTips (Millipore) following manufacturer's instructions.

Tryptic peptides were re-dissolved in 10  $\mu$ l 5% formic acid and 6  $\mu$ l was injected onto a 50 mm 300  $\mu$ m C18 trap column (Agilent Technologies) followed by initial wash step by Buffer A (5% (v/v) ACN, 0.1% (v/v) formic acid) for 5 min at 30  $\mu$ l/min. Peptides were eluted at a flow rate of 0.3  $\mu$ l/min onto an analytical nano HPLC column (15 cm x 75  $\mu$ m 300SBC18, 3.5  $\mu$ m, Agilent Technologies). The eluted peptides were then separated by a 55-min gradient of buffer B (90/10 acetonitrile/ 0.1% formic acid) 1-40% followed by a 5 min steeper gradient from 40-80%. The mass spectrometer (ABSciex 5600 Triple ToF) operated in data-dependent acquisition mode, in which full scan TOF-MS data was acquired over the range of 350-1400 m/z, and over the range of 80-1400 m/z for product-ion observed in the TOF-MS scan exceeding a threshold of 100 counts and a charge state of +2 to +5. Analyst 1.6.1 (ABSCIEX) software was used for data acquisition and analysis.

For protein identification, a database was built using the *S. mansoni* genome v5.0 (<http://www.genedb.org/Homepage/Smansoni>) with the common repository of adventitious proteins (cRAP, <http://www.thegpm.org/crap/>) appended to it. Mascot v.2.5.1 (Matrix Science) was used for database search. Carbamidomethylation of Cys was set as a fixed modification and oxidation of Met and deamidation of Asn and Gln were set as variable modifications. MS and MS/MS tolerance were set at 10 ppm and 0.1 Da, respectively and only proteins with at least two unique peptides (each composed of at least seven amino acid residues) identified were considered reliably identified and used for analysis.

### 3.2.14 Bio-scavenging of organophosphorus esters by *SmBChE1*

To test the hypothesis that *SmBChE1* may play a role in the bio-scavenging of AChE-inhibitory organophosphates (OPs), I first sought to determine whether inhibition of BChE activity would potentiate the AChE-inhibitory and anti-schistosomal effects of OPs. *Schistosomula* extracts (20  $\mu$ g) were diluted in assay buffer, pre-incubated with iso-OMPA (1 or 2 mM) for 20 min at RT and then 1  $\mu$ M (DDVP) for another 20 min at RT (180  $\mu$ l final volume). ACh (2 mM) and DTNB (0.5 mM) were then added and the absorbance increase monitored every 5 min at 405 nm in a Polarstar Omega microplate reader (BMG Labtech). Extracts untreated with iso-OMPA with or without DDVP treatment were used as controls. Experiments were performed in triplicate with data presented as the mean  $\pm$  SEM.

The same experiments were performed on live schistosomula using either an inhibitor- or RNAi-based approach. For the inhibitor-based experiment, 24 h schistosomula (1000/treatment in 1 ml serum-free Basch medium supplemented with 4XAA) were pretreated with iso-OMPA at the non-lethal concentration of 100  $\mu$ M and, 1 h after iso-OMPA treatment, schistosomula were treated with 1  $\mu$ M DDVP and cultured for 5 h at 37°C in 5% CO<sub>2</sub>. Parasites untreated with iso-OMPA but treated with DDVP were used as controls. For the RNAi-based experiment, 24 h schistosomula (1500/100  $\mu$ l serum-free Basch medium supplemented with 4XAA) were electroporated with either 10  $\mu$ g of a short interfering RNA duplex (siRNA) (Supplementary Table 4.1) targeting *SmBChE1* or firefly luciferase (irrelevant siRNA control) (Tran et al. 2010) in Genepulser 4 mm electroporation cuvettes (Bio-Rad) using a Bio-Rad Gene Pulser Xcell (single 20

ms pulse - 125V, 25  $\mu$ F capacitance, 200 resistance, square wave electroporation) at RT. Parasites were added to 24 well plates containing 1 ml pre-warmed, serum-free Basch medium (supplemented with 4XAA) and incubated (37°C, 5% CO<sub>2</sub>) for 3 days before being treated with 1  $\mu$ M DDVP and cultured for a further 5 h. For both inhibitor- and RNAi-based experiments, schistosomula viability was determined using Trypan Blue staining and data is presented as the mean  $\pm$  SEM of two biological and three technical replicates.

In a reverse testing of the bio-scavenging hypothesis, I sought to determine whether addition of fSmBChE could mitigate the effects of DDVP. Ten micrograms of fSmBChE1 was pre-incubated with 1  $\mu$ M DDVP in AChE assay buffer (170  $\mu$ l final volume) for 20 min at RT. Schistosomula extracts (20  $\mu$ g), ACh (2 mM) and DTNB (0.5 mM) were then added and the absorbance increase monitored every 5 min at 405 nm in a Polarstar Omega microplate reader (BMG Labtech). Reactions without fSmBChE or without DDVP were used as controls. Experiments were performed in triplicate with data presented as the mean  $\pm$  SEM. Again, the same experiments were performed on live schistosomula. After the pre-treatment of different amounts of fSmBChE (10, 5, and 2.5  $\mu$ g) with 1  $\mu$ M DDVP in 500  $\mu$ l serum-free Basch medium supplemented with 4XAA, twenty-four hour schistosomula (1000/treatment in 500  $\mu$ l serum-free Basch medium supplemented with 4XAA) were added, incubated (37°C, 5% CO<sub>2</sub>) for 24 hours and then parasite viability measured by Trypan Blue Staining. Experiments where a similarly expressed and purified but irrelevant protein (*SmTSP2*) was used instead of fSmBChE, and schistosomula cultured in

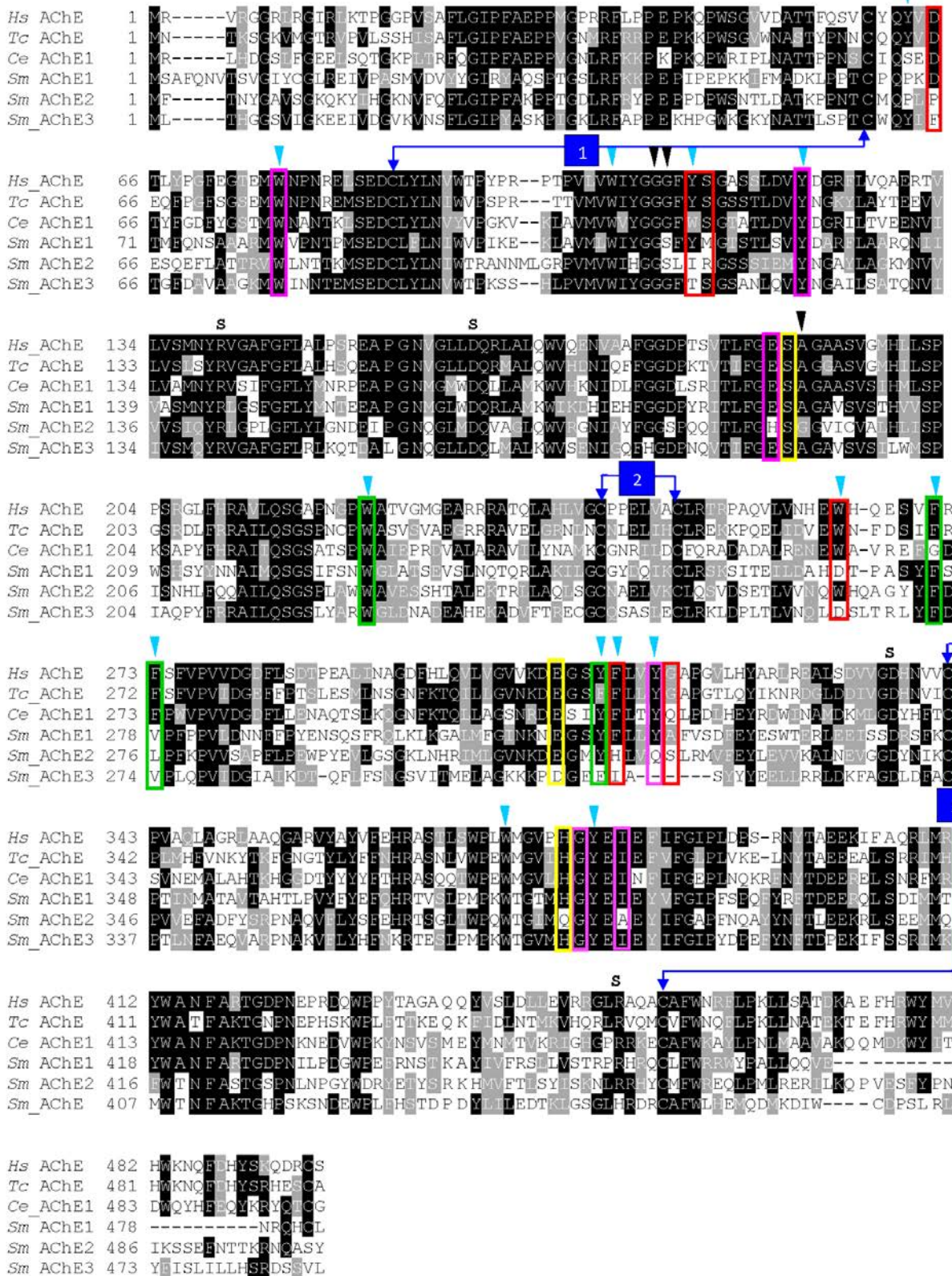
media alone, were used as controls. Data is presented as the mean  $\pm$  SEM of two biological and three technical replicates.

### 3.3 Results

#### 3.3.1 Identification of novel genes encoding ChE proteins in *S. mansoni*

Three putative ChE paralogs were identified from interrogation of the *S. mansoni* genome: *SmAChE1* (Smp\_154600), *SmBChE1* (Smp\_125350) and *SmAChE3* (Smp\_136690). The predicted *SmChEs* were then aligned with characterized AChE enzymes from *Homo sapiens*, the electric eel *Torpedo californica*, and the nematode *Caenorhabditis elegans* (Fig 3.1A). Homology analysis of amino acid sequences revealed that the *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1*, and *SmAChE3* share (32-35%) sequence identity and (49-52%) sequence similarity. Further, all *SmChEs* have 36-40% amino acid identity with *H. sapiens* and *T. californica* AChE. All identified *SmChEs* had ChE-specific characteristics, including a catalytic triad with an active site serine, which is required for ester hydrolysis (Dvir et al. 2010). Interestingly, the His residue of the catalytic triad of *SmBChE1* appears to have been substituted for Gln, a change consistent among all the BChE1 homologs shown for other Platyhelminthes, but not nematode or model organism BChE1 sequences (Fig 3.1B).

(A)





## (B)

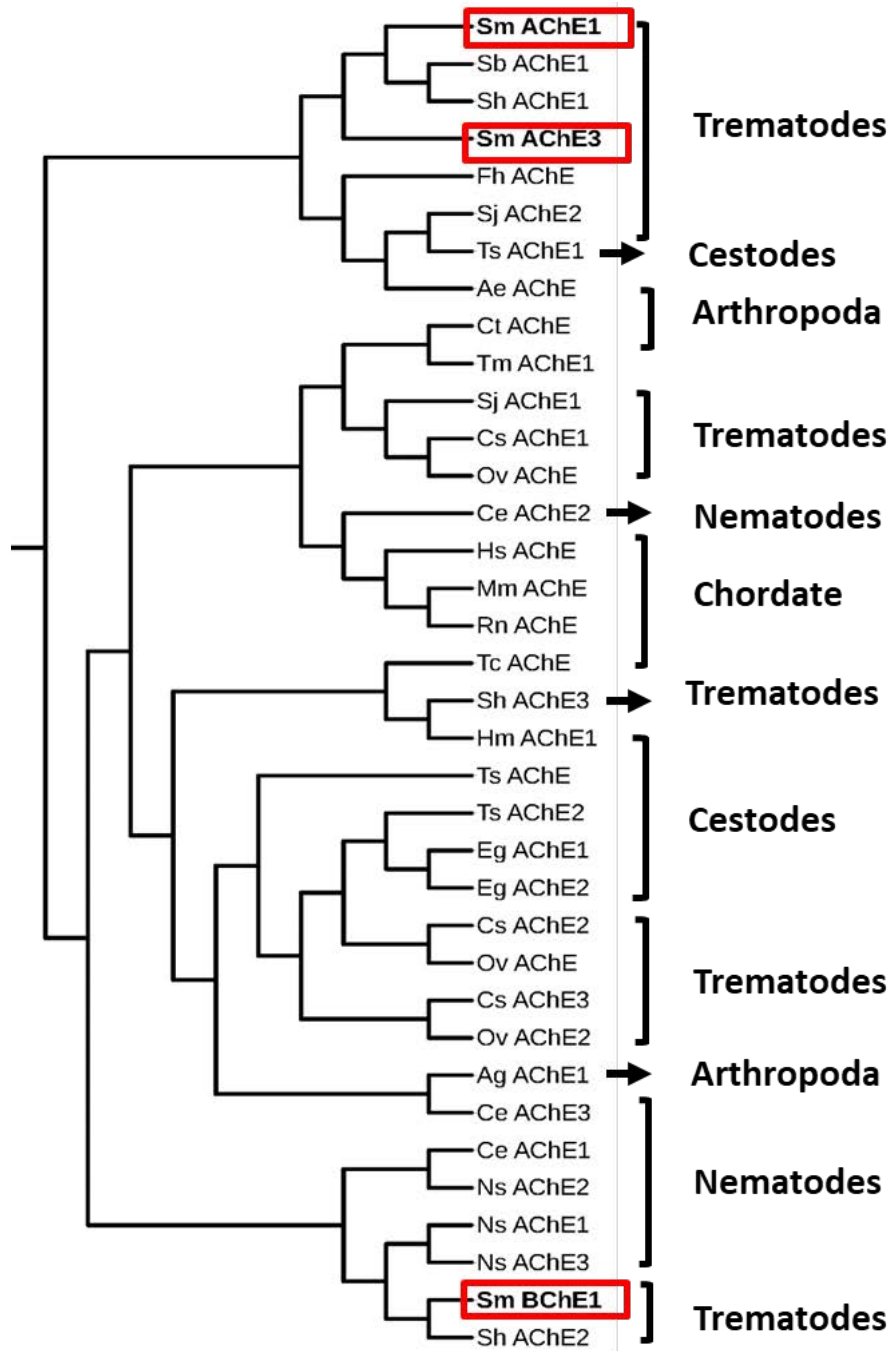
<i>H sapiens</i>	423	SKLPWFPEWMGVM	H	G	Y	E	I	E	F	V	F	G	L	P	L	E	R	-----	R	D	N	Y	T	K	A	E	E	I	L	S	R	S	I	V	K	R	W	A	N	F	A	K	Y	G	N	P		
<i>C elegans</i>	425	SANPWPKWTGVM	H	G	Y	E	I	E	Y	V	F	G	V	P	L	H	N	----	T	T	A	G	Y	T	K	E	E	M	D	V	S	E	K	V	I	D	F	W	I	T	F	A	N	T	G	V	P	
<i>N brasiliensis</i>	424	SANPWPKWTGVM	H	G	Y	E	I	E	Y	V	F	G	V	P	L	I	N	----	E	S	A	G	Y	T	K	R	E	Q	V	L	S	E	K	I	I	Q	Y	W	S	S	F	E	P	C	C	T	F	
<i>T trichiura</i>	430	SQQVWFPEWMCAM	H	G	Y	E	I	N	F	I	Y	G	E	P	L	N	I	----	H	R	Y	A	Y	T	E	A	E	K	D	L	S	R	R	F	M	S	Y	W	A	N	F	A	R	T	G	N	P	
<i>T muris</i>	430	SQQVWFPEWMCAM	H	G	Y	E	I	N	F	V	Y	G	E	P	L	N	V	----	R	Q	Y	A	Y	T	E	A	E	K	L	S	R	R	F	M	R	Y	W	A	N	F	A	R	T	G	--			
<i>T suis</i>	430	SQQVWFPEWMCAM	H	G	Y	E	I	N	F	I	Y	G	E	P	L	N	I	----	H	R	Y	A	Y	T	E	A	E	K	D	L	S	R	R	F	M	S	Y	W	A	N	F	A	R	T	G	--		
<b>Sm_BChE1</b>	481	SGLTWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	Q	A	F	T	D	N	Y	N	F	T	L	E	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	M	Q	F	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	S	P	
<i>S haematobium</i>	481	TGLTWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	Q	A	F	I	D	H	Y	N	F	T	L	E	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	I	M	Q	F	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	S	P
<i>S japonicum</i>	481	SGLTWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	Q	A	F	T	D	N	Y	N	F	T	P	E	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	M	Q	F	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	--		
<i>S rodhaini</i>	404	SGLTWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	Q	A	F	T	D	N	Y	N	F	T	L	E	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	M	Q	F	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	S	P	
<i>C sinensis</i>	305	QASPWFQWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	P	D	Y	Q	K	Q	F	Y	N	F	T	D	E	E	R	L	S	E	E	M	R	F	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	S	P	
<i>E caproni</i>	336	EALSWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	P	D	F	Q	Q	Q	F	H	N	F	T	E	D	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	M	R	C	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	--		
<i>T solium</i>	480	SGWTWPNWTGVM	Q	A	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	L	K	F	Q	M	D	E	Y	K	F	S	D	E	E	R	K	L	S	A	S	I	M	Q	Y	W	A	N	F	A	T	G	S	P
<i>T saginata</i>	481	SGWTWPNWTGVM	Q	A	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	L	K	F	Q	M	D	E	Y	K	F	S	D	E	E	R	K	L	S	A	S	I	M	Q	Y	W	A	N	F	A	T	G	S	P
<i>E granulosus</i>	410	SGWTWPNWTGVM	Q	A	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	L	K	F	Q	M	D	E	Y	K	F	S	D	E	E	R	K	L	S	A	S	I	M	Q	Y	W	A	N	F	A	T	G	S	P
<i>H diminuta</i>	477	SGWTWPNWTGVM	Q	G	Y	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	L	K	F	Q	S	E	F	Y	K	F	S	E	E	E	R	L	S	N	Q	I	M	Q	F	W	A	N	F	A	T	G	S	P	
<i>F hepatica</i>	456	VAFSWPEWWTGVM	Q	G	E	A	E	Y	I	F	G	A	P	N	P	D	F	Q	R	E	F	Y	N	F	T	D	E	E	K	R	L	S	E	E	M	R	C	W	I	N	F	A	S	T	G	S	P	

**Fig 3.1. The amino acid sequence alignment of ChEs from *S. mansoni* and other species. (A)** ▼ = the 14 aromatic rings, ↓ = Oxyanion holes, S= salt bridges, Red box= PAS, Yellow box= Catalytic triad, Green box= Acyl Binding Pocket, Numbered Arrow =3 disulphide bonds and Magenta box=Anionic site. *H. Sapiens* (NP000656), *T. Californica* (CAA27169), *C. elegans* (NP510660), *SmAChE1* (Smp\_154600), *SmBChE1* (Smp\_125350), *SmAChE3* (Smp\_136690). **(B)** Sequence alignment of the *SmBChE1* homologous sequences in other helminths. Accession numbers of sequences: *Schistosoma mansoni* (*SmBChE1* – Smp\_125350), *Schistosoma rodhaini* (SROB\_0000329201), *Schistosoma haematobium* (KGB33101), *Schistosoma japonicum* (Sjp\_0015690), *Clonorchis sinensis* (csin111679), *Echinostoma caproni* (ECPE\_0000670801), *Fasciola hepatica* (PIS83327.1), *Hymenolepis diminuta* (HDID\_0000005301), *Echinococcus granulosus* (EGR\_07475.1), *Taenia solium* (TsM\_000234300), *Taenia saginata* (TSA00071g07627m00001), *Trichuris muris* (TMUE\_3000012587), *Trichuris trichiura* (TTRE\_0000364501), *Trichuris suis* (M514\_03850), *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* (NBR\_0000102801), *Caenorhabditis elegans* (Y48B6A.8.1) and *Homo sapiens* ( P06276).

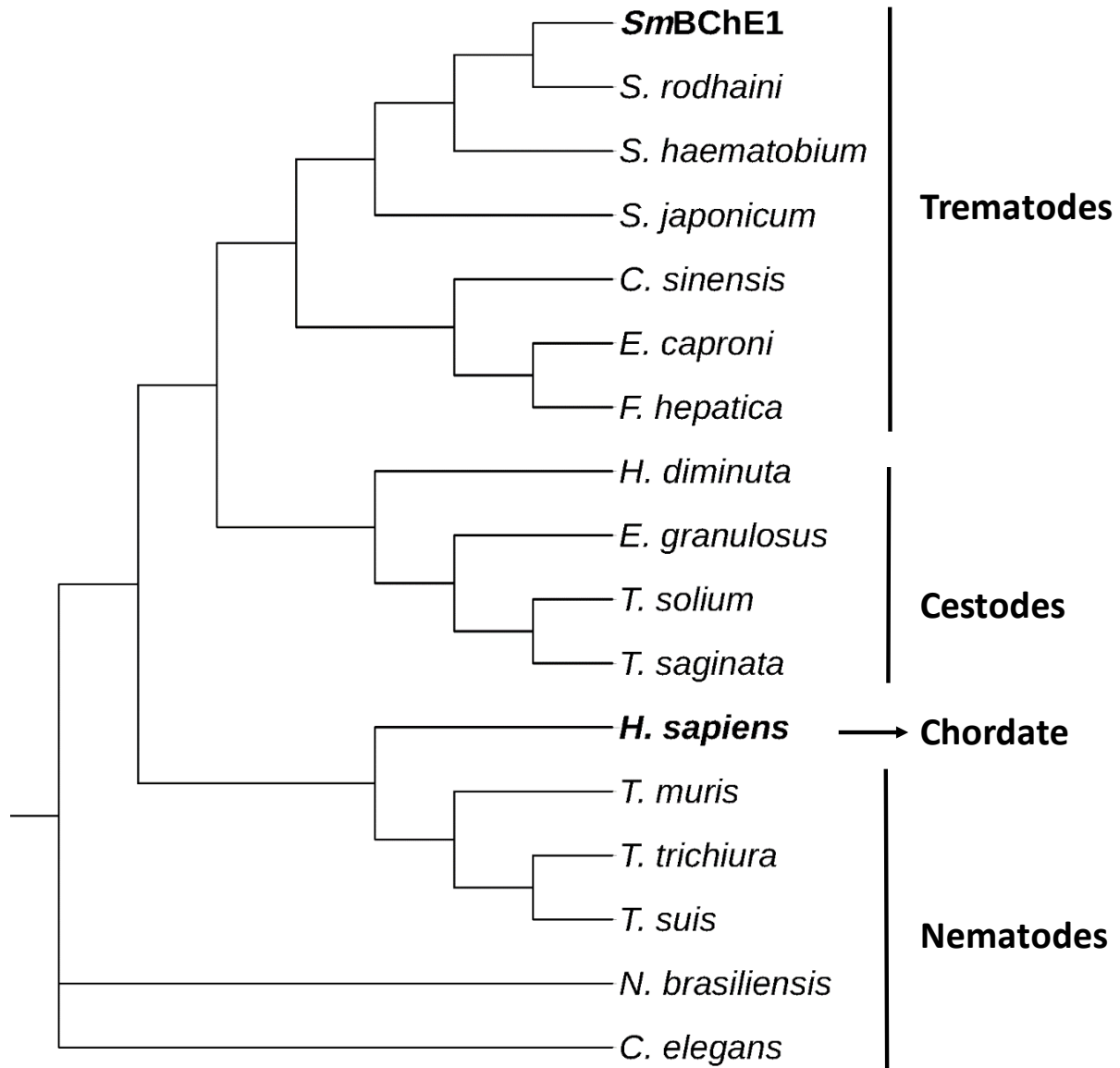
A phylogenetic tree of the alignment (Fig 3.2A) shows that *SmChEs* were clustered into three distinct branches, with *SmChE1* being quite phylogenetically distinct from *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3*. In addition, each *SmChE* was grouped together with closely related flatworms, including other *Schistosoma* species. Importantly, as shown in the sequence alignment, *SmChEs* are divergent from human host homologs. Fig 3.2B shows that reflective of the catalytic triad residue differences in Fig.1B, trematode BChEs are phylogenetically divergent from nematode and human BChEs.

A 3D model of the three *SmChEs* was constructed by homology modeling with AChE from model organisms (*H. sapiens* and *T. californica*) (Fig 3.3A-C). The overall fold model of all *SmChEs* exhibited folding characteristic of the functional globular enzymes as most of the  $\alpha$ -helical and  $\beta$ -stranded sheets were tightly aligned. Each predicted *SmChE* structure consisted of a ChE catalytic domain but, although the core architecture of the catalytic gorges was well aligned, regions that are associated with substrate specificity and catalytic efficiency were disparate, in agreement with the sequence alignment. In particular, the catalytic triad of *SmBChE1* was predicted to be Ser-Gln-Glu instead of the canonical Ser-His-Glu present in the other two paralogs.

(A)



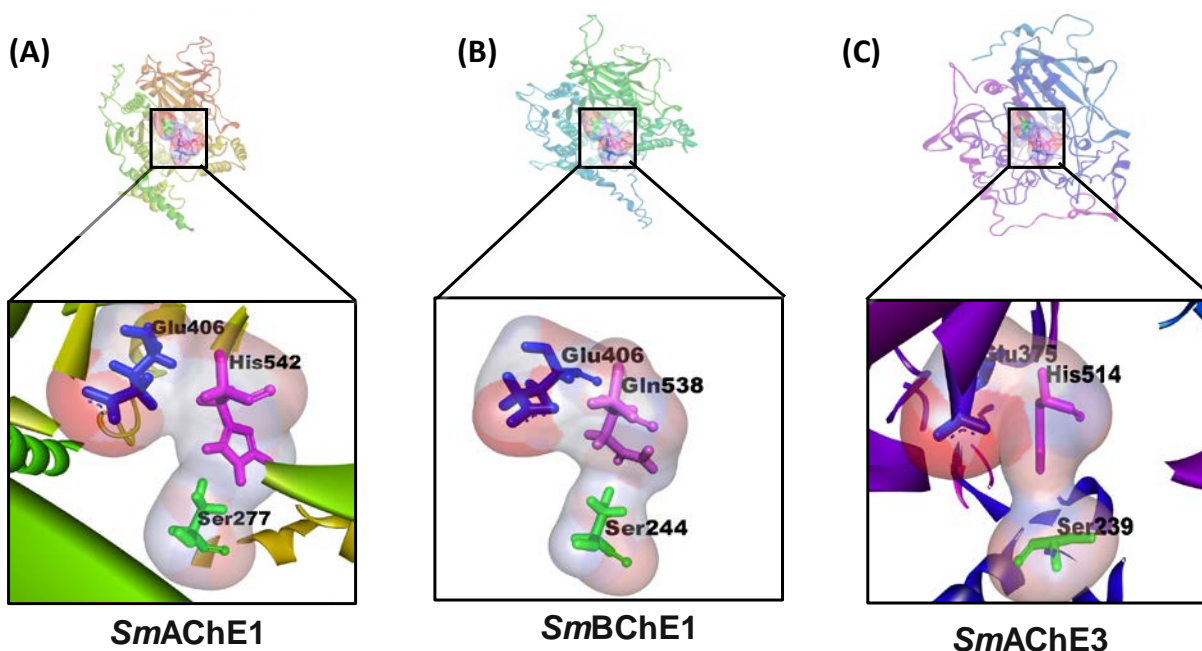
(B)



**Fig 3.2. Phylogenetic of AChEs. (A)** The three *SmChEs* are indicated by bold font inside a red box.

Relationship between *SmChEs* and other invertebrate and vertebrate species. Evolutionary history was inferred using the Neighbor-Joining method and the phylogenetic tree was generated using a ClustalW alignment. The evolutionary distances were computed using the Poisson correction method and are in the units of the number of amino acid substitutions per site. All positions containing gaps and missing data were eliminated, making for a total of 236 positions in the final dataset. Evolutionary analyses were conducted in MEGA7 (Kumar et al. 2016). Accession numbers: *Schistosoma mansoni* (**Sm\_AChE1** - Smp\_154600, **Sm\_BChE1** - Smp\_125350, **Sm\_AChE3** - Smp\_136690); *Schistosoma bovis* (**Sb\_AChE1** - AAQ14323); *Schistosoma haematobium* (**Sh\_AChE1** - AAQ14322, **Sh\_AChE2** - KGB33101, **Sh\_AChE3** - KGB33661); *Schistosoma japonicum* (**Sj\_AChE1** - ANH56887, **Sj\_AChE2** - Sjp0045440.1); *Fasciola hepatica* (**Fh\_AChE** - THD22977.1); *Clonorchis sinensis* (**Cs\_AChE1** - GAA52478, **Cs\_AChE2** - GAA53463, **Cs\_AChE3** - GAA27255); *Opisthorchis viverrini* (**Ov\_AChE** - XP009170845, **Ov\_AChE** - XP009168237, **Ov\_AChE** - XP009170760); *Echinococcus granulosus* (**Eg\_AChE1** - JN662938, **Eg\_AChE2** - EgG000732400); *Hymenolepis microstoma* (**Hm\_AChE1** - LK053025); *Taenia solium* (**Ts\_AChE1** - TsM000234300, **Ts\_AChE** - TsM001220100, **Ts\_AChE** - TsM000001700); *Anopheles gambiae* (**Ag\_AChE1** - AGM16375); *Aedes aegypti* (**Ae\_AChE** - AAB35001); *Culex tritaeniorhynchus* (**Ct\_AChE** - BAD06210); *Caenorhabditis elegans* (**Ce\_AChE1** - NP510660, **Ce\_AChE2** - NP491141, **Ce\_AChE3** - NP496963); *Trichuris muris* (**Tm\_AChE1** - TMUEs0033000600); *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* (**Nb\_AChE1** - AAK44221, **Nb\_AChE2** - AAC05785, **Nb\_AChE3** - AAK44221); *Homo sapiens* (**Hs\_AChE** - NP000656); *Torpedo californica* (**Tc\_AChE** - CAA27169); *Danio rerio* (**Dr\_AChE** - NP571921); *Mus musculus* (**Mm\_AChE** - CAA39867);

*Rattus norvegicus* (Rn\_AChE - NP742006). **(B)** Phylogenetic analysis of SmBChE1 and its human and other helminth homologs. The phylogenetic tree was built using the maximum likelihood method with SmBChE1 and the top 16 similar helminths cholinesterase protein sequences identified from the BLASTp search, as well as one known Human BChE protein. Accession numbers of sequences: *Schistosoma mansoni* (SmBChE1 – Smp\_125350), *Schistosoma rodhaini* (SROB\_0000329201), *Schistosoma haematobium* (KGB33101), *Schistosoma japonicum* (Sjp\_0015690), *Clonorchis sinensis* (csin111679), *Echinostoma caproni* (ECPE\_0000670801), *Fasciola hepatica* (PIS83327.1), *Hymenolepis diminuta* (HDID\_0000005301), *Echinococcus granulosus* (EGR\_07475.1), *Taenia solium* (TsM\_000234300), *Taenia saginata* (TSAs00071g07627m00001), *Trichuris muris* (TMUE\_3000012587), *Trichuris trichiura* (TTRE\_0000364501), *Trichuris suis* (M514\_03850), *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* (NBR\_0000102801), *Caenorhabditis elegans* (Y48B6A.8.1) and *Homo sapiens* ( P06276).



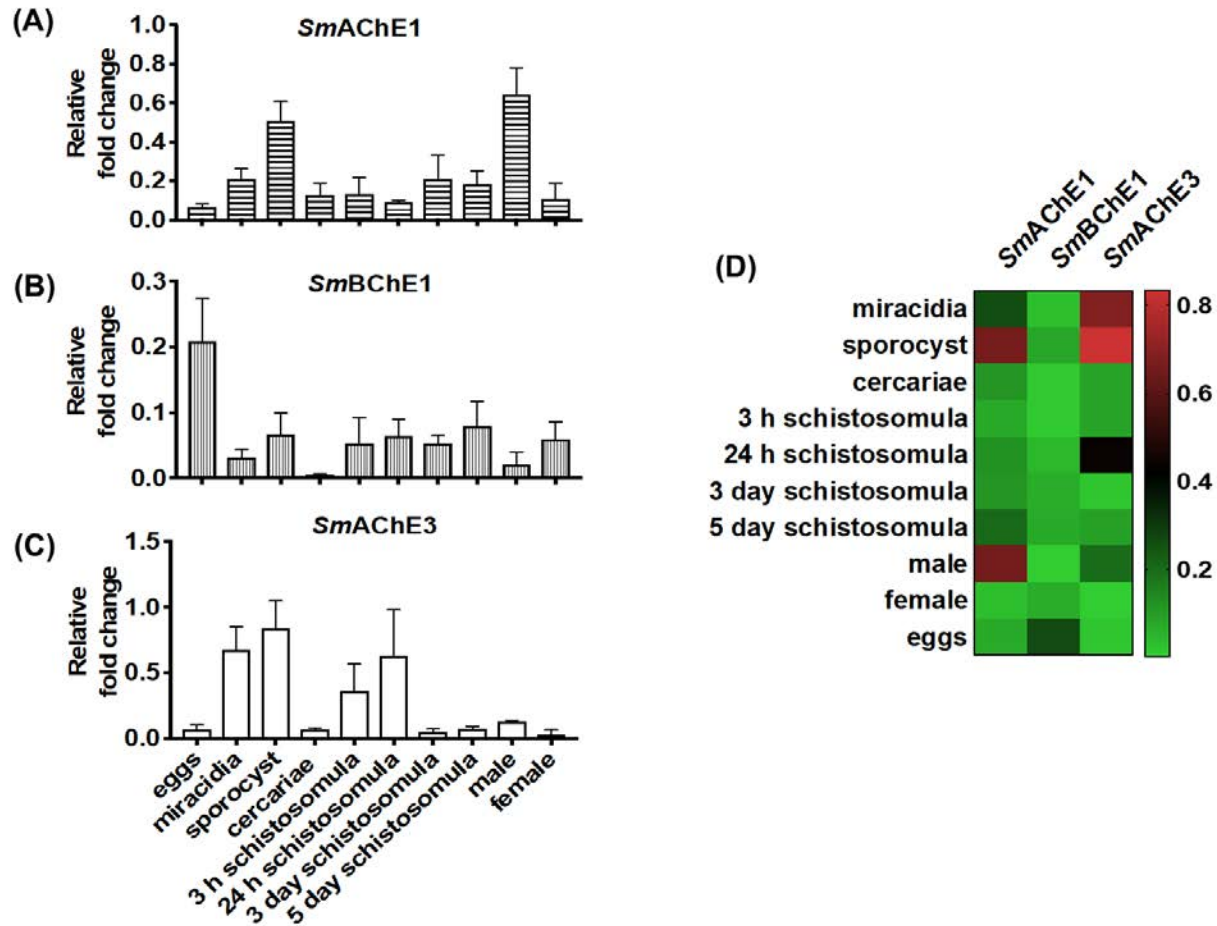
**Fig 3.3.** Magnified view of 3D models showing the catalytic triads of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1*, and *SmAChE3*. The amino acid residues of the catalytic triad of each paralog are magnified and their position number is given according to *Torpedo* AChE numbering: *SmAChE1* (Ser277, Gln538, Glu406), *SmBChE1* (Ser244, Gln538, Glu406), and *SmAChE3* (Ser239, His514, Glu375).

### 3.3.2 Developmental expression analysis of *SmChE* genes

Gene expression patterns of the three *SmChE* paralogs across different developmental stages were measured using semi-quantitative qPCR (Fig 3.4A-C) and this data was used to generate a comparative expression heat map of all three genes (Fig 3.4D). While all *SmChE* developmental expression patterns were variable, the transcript levels of all the three genes were relatively lower in cercariae compared to the other developmental stages. Overall, the transcript levels of *SmAChE1* and *SmAChE3* genes in most life stages were higher as compared to the *SmBChE1* transcript. In adult worms, *SmAChE1* was expressed at higher levels, specifically in male parasites



followed by sporocysts. Eggs and sporocysts exhibited ubiquitous expression of *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3*, respectively.



**Fig 3.4.** Expression profiles of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1*, and *SmAChE3*.

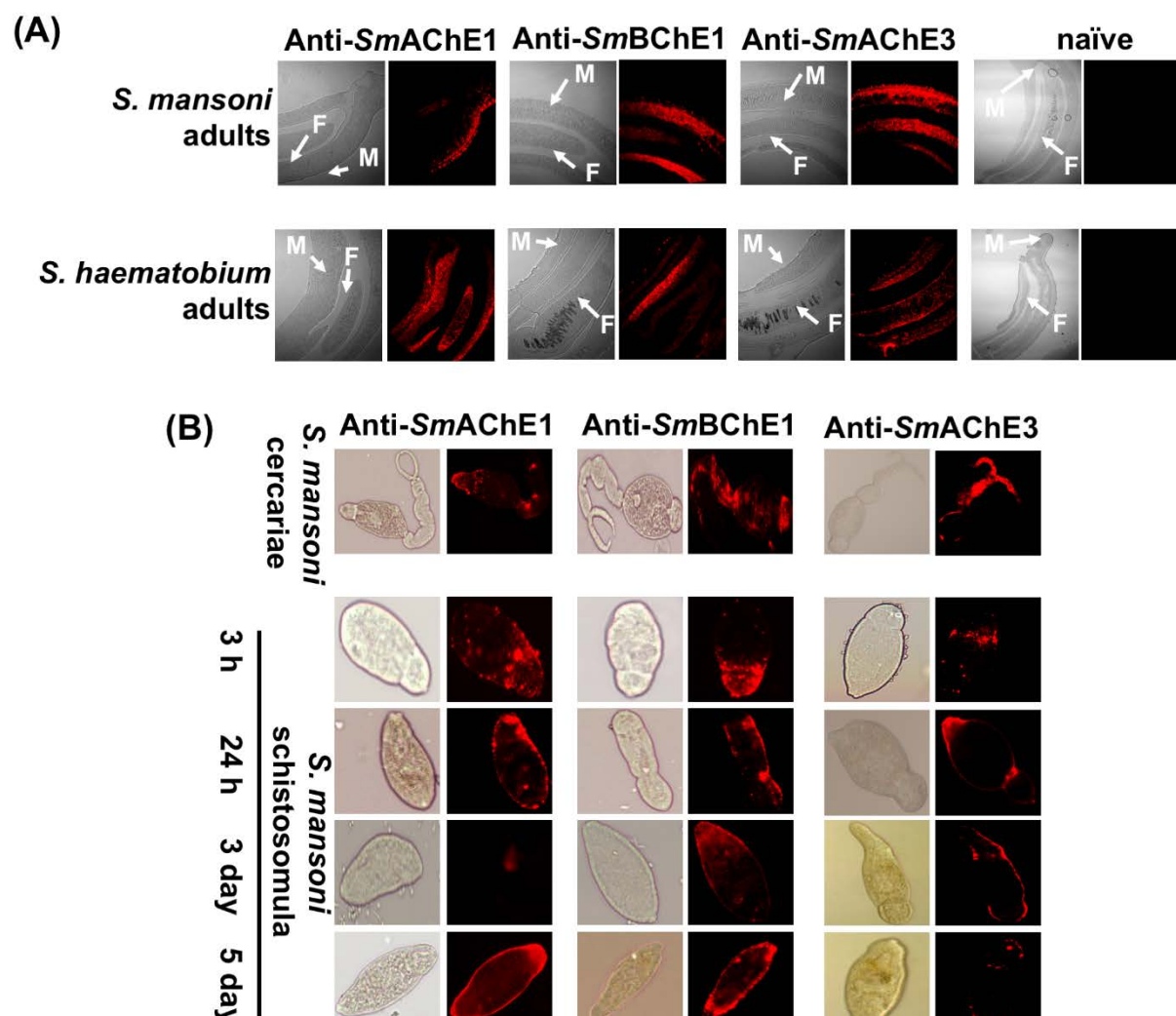
The expression of *SmAChE1* (A), *SmABChE1* (B), and *SmAChE3* (C) genes at different developmental stages of *S. mansoni* as quantified by qPCR analysis. (D) The heat map shows the comparative expression pattern of the paralogs in each developmental stage. Data are presented as mean  $\pm$  SEM of five independent experiments and are normalized to the *SmCOX1* housekeeping gene.

### 3.3.3 Cloning and protein expression of *SmChEs* in bacteria

Partial ORFs selected from highly polymorphic regions of each paralog were cloned and expressed in *E. coli* BL21 (DE3) cells. Recombinant proteins of expected size were purified from inclusion bodies using IMAC under denaturing conditions. Final yields were: p*SmAChE1* (25 kDa) – 6.0 mg/L, p*SmBChE1* (23 kDa) - 16 mg/L and p*SmAChE3* (25 kDa) – 3.5 mg/L.

### 3.3.4 Immunolocalization of *SmChEs*

To gain insight into the anatomical sites of expression of ChE proteins in *S. mansoni*, *SmChEs* were immunolocalized in whole juvenile and sectioned adult parasites. In adults, and consistent with their predicted cholinergic function, all *SmChEs* were expressed throughout the worms' internal structures (presumably localizing to the neuromusculature) and on their surface. *SmAChE1* was the least uniformly distributed of all *SmChEs*, localizing mostly to the tegument (Fig 3.5A). Additionally, anti-*SmChE* antibodies were able to detect homologous ChEs in adult *S. haematobium* sections. *SmChE* proteins were detected in all stages of larval development tested and, as was the case with adult worms, localized to the tegument.



**Fig 3.5. Immunofluorescent localization of SmChEs.**

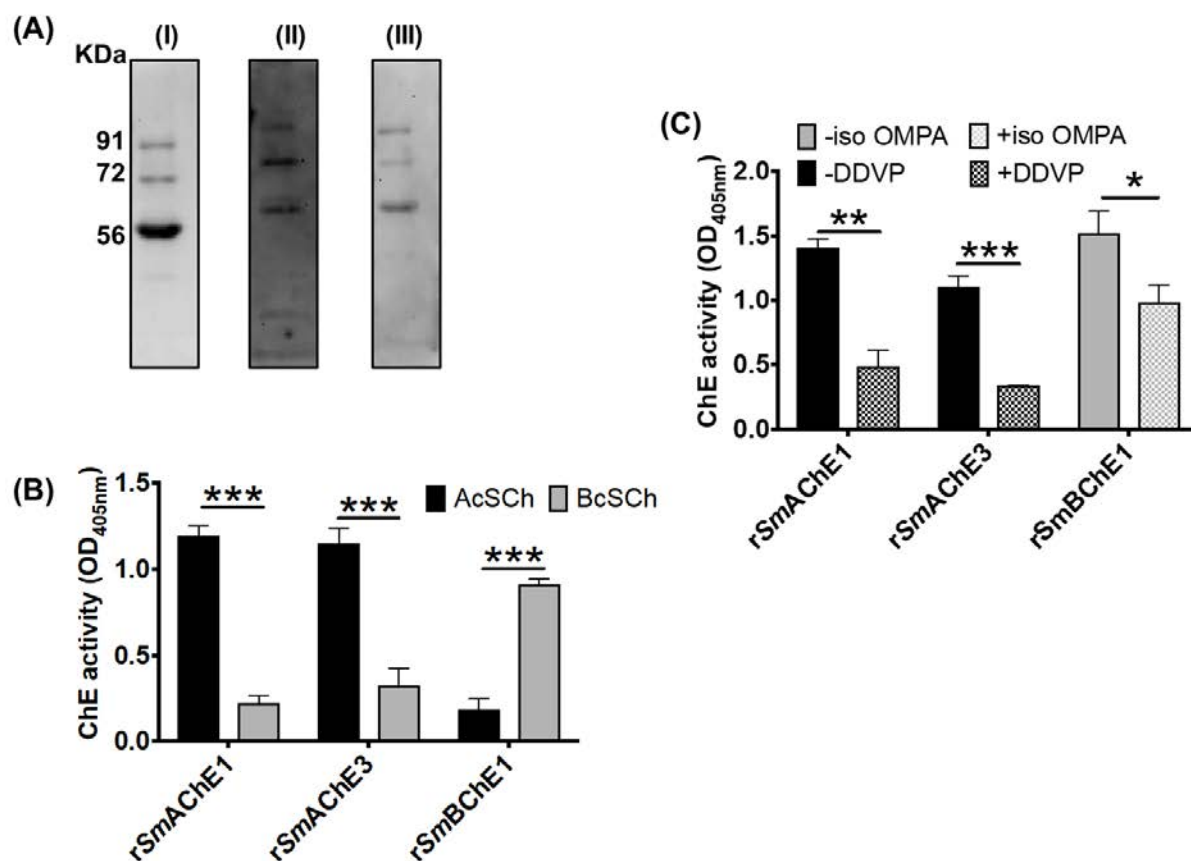
Fluorescence and brightfield images of **(A)** Male (M) and female (F) *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium* adult worm sections. **(B)** Live, fixed cercariae, and schistosomula at 3 h, 24 h, 3 days and 5 days after transformation. Both adult sections and juvenile parasites were labeled with either anti-SmAChE1, anti-SmBChE1 or anti-SmAChE3 primary antibody (1:100 in PBST) followed by goat-anti-mouse IgG-alexafuor647) (1:200 in PBST). Naive mouse sera was used as a negative control.

### 3.3.5 Expression and ChE activity of fSmChEs

Soluble, functionally active proteins were expressed in *P. pastoris* purified via IMAC. Both fSmAChE1 and fSmAChE3 demonstrated significantly stronger hydrolase activity when AcSCh was used as a substrate, compared to fSmBChE1. Conversely, fSmBChE1 hydrolyzed BcSCh to significantly higher levels compared to fSmAChE1 and fSmAChE3. Both classes of fSmChEs showed significantly higher activity against their preferred substrate (Fig 3.6B). All paralogs exhibited Michaelis–Menten kinetics (Table 3.1) when hydrolyzing their designated substrate. In addition, preferred substrate activity of both fSmAChE1 and fSmAChE3 were inhibited by DDVP (Fig 3.6C), an AChE inhibitor that forms an irreversible covalent bond with the catalytic serine, but iso-OMPA, a specific inhibitor of BChE, only inhibited SmBChE1 activity (Fig 3.6D).

**Table 3. 1.  $K_m$  and  $V_{max}$  fSmChEs as estimated by Michaelis-Menten equation**

<b>SmChE paralog</b>	<b><math>V_{max}</math> (nmol/min/mg)</b>	<b><math>K_m</math> (mM)</b>
<i>fSmAChE1</i>	5.57 ± 0.54	5.83 ± 1.62
<i>fSmAChE3</i>	5.59 ± 1.37	10.87 ± 6.17
<i>fSmBChE1</i>	1.7 ± 0.09	34.38 ± 12.71

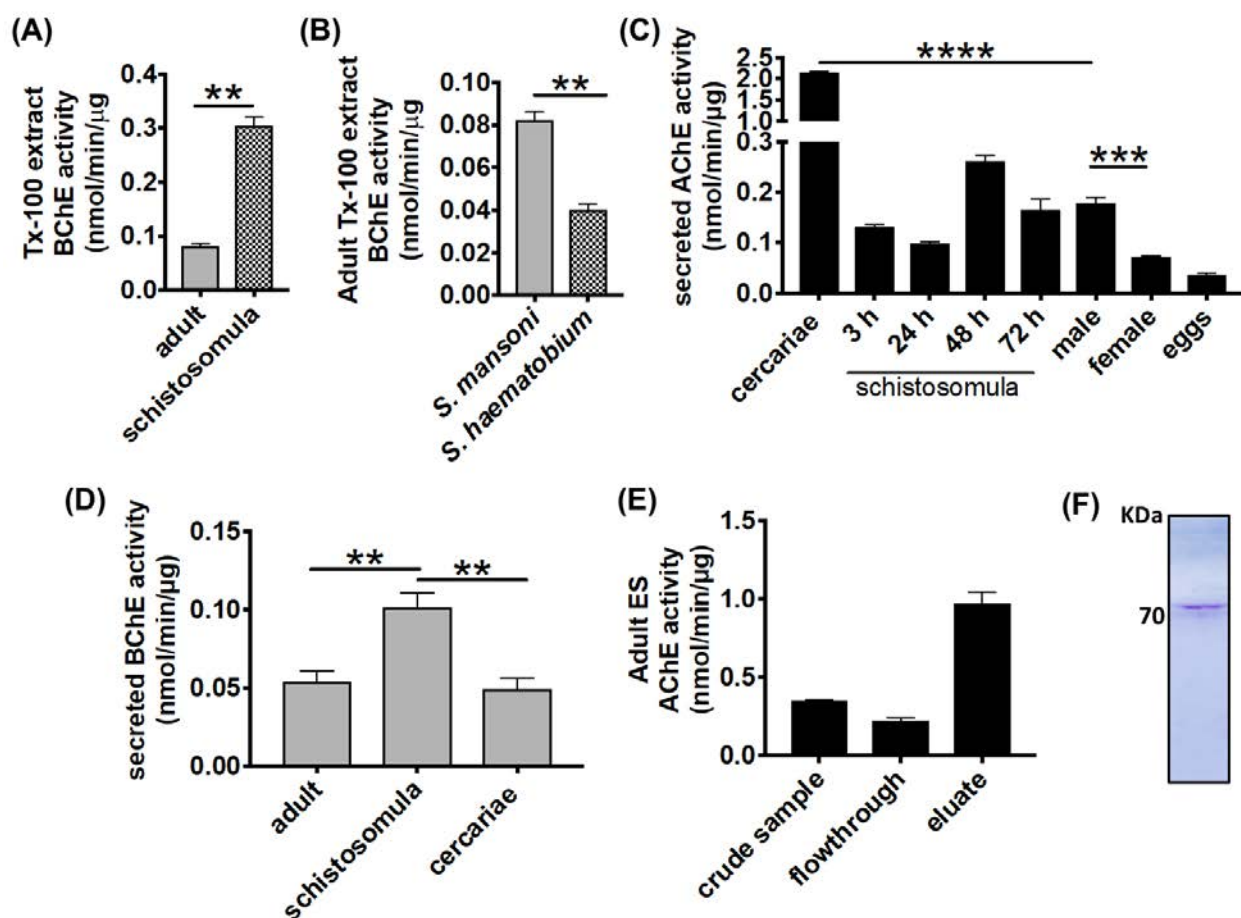


**Fig 3.6. Enzymatic activity of fSmChEs.** (A) Western Blot analysis of purified recombinant fSmAChE1, fSmBChE1, and fSmAChE3 expressed in *P. pastoris*. Each fSmChE was probed with its cognate pSmChE antibody (I) fSmAChE1 probed with anti-SmAChE1 mice antisera, (II) fSmBChE1 probed with anti-SmBChE1 (III) fSmAChE3 probed with anti-SmAChE3. Multiple bands observed are due to protein degradation during the purification process. (B) Cholinergic substrate preference (AcSCh or BcSCh) of each fSmChE. (C) Inhibition of fSmAChE1 and fSmAChE3 with DDVP (AcSCh used as a substrate) and inhibition of fSmBChE1 with iso-OMPA (BcSCh used as a substrate). Data are presented as mean  $\pm$  SEM of triplicate experiments and differences between groups were measured by the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ .

### 3.3.6 BChE and secretory AChE activity in schistosomes

Although the presence of nonspecific ChE activity has long been known in schistosomes (Bueding 1952), the gene identity and its function remain unknown. Prompted by the identification of *SmBChE1* as a BChE based on its substrate preference and inhibition by iso-OMPA, I sought to investigate the distribution of BChE activity in juvenile and adult schistosomes. Assay of BChE activity revealed that extracts from *S. mansoni* schistosomula had higher BChE activity compared to *S. mansoni* adult worms (Fig 3.7A) and that activity was significantly greater in *S. mansoni* compared with *S. haematobium* adults (Fig 3.7B). Varied amounts of AChE activity was detected in ES from all developmental stages tested. ES products from adult males had double the AChE activity compared to adult female ES products ( $P < 0.001$ ) while cercarial ES exhibited the highest activity (at least ten-fold more than male ES products ( $P < 0.0001$ ) and egg ES had the lowest (Fig 3.7C). Availability of ES precluded the measurement of secretory BChE activity from the same developmental stages but, of those tested, the BChE activity in schistosomula ES products was the highest - twice as high as that of adult ( $P < 0.01$ ) and cercarial ( $P < 0.01$ ) ES (Fig 3.7D). *SmChEs* were purified from ES products of *S. mansoni* adult worms using edrophonium–sepharose affinity chromatography. Purification resulted in an activity increase of more than 200-fold relative to crude ES (Fig 3.7E). Resolution of the purified sample by SDS-PAGE resulted in a doublet with an estimated molecular weight of 70 kDa (Fig 3.7F). The identity of purified, secretory *SmChEs* was substantiated by in-gel LC-MS/MS spectrometry analysis with the peptide data generated used to interrogate the *S. mansoni* proteome (predicted from the *S. mansoni* genome

(<http://www.genedb.org/Homepage/Smanson>). The false discovery rate was set at <1% and only proteins with at least two unique peptides having significant Mascot identification scores ( $P < 0.05$ ) were considered. The top protein hits were identified as *SmAChE1* (Smp\_154600) and *SmBChE1* (Smp\_125350) with *SmAChE1* having a relative abundance more than 40 fold that of *SmBChE1* (Supplementary Table 3.2).



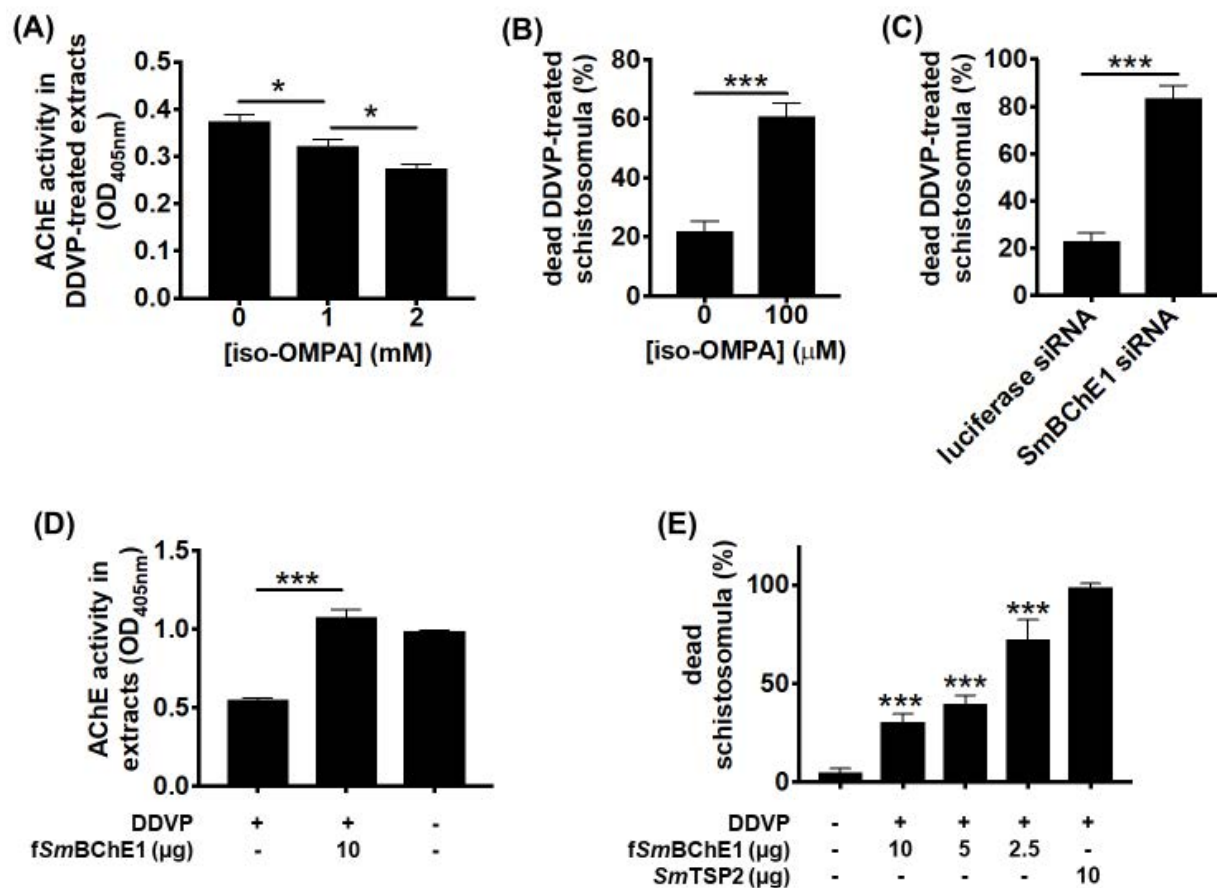
**Fig 3.7. BChE and secretory AChE activity in schistosomes. (A)** BChE activity in *S. mansoni* adults and schistosomula Tx-100 extracts. **(B)** BChE activity in Tx-100 extracts from *S. mansoni* and *S. haematobium*. **(C)** AChE and **(D)** BChE activity of ES products from different developmental stages of *S. mansoni*. **(E)** AChE activity and **(F)** SDS-PAGE analysis of purified, secretory *SmChEs*. Data are

presented as mean  $\pm$  SEM of triplicate experiments and differences between groups were measured by the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ .

### **3.3.7 Bio-scavenging of organophosphorus esters by *SmBChE1***

The hypothesis that *SmBChE* may act as a molecular decoy in schistosomes and detoxify the effects of organophosphorus AChE inhibitors was examined by testing whether (a) inhibition of parasite-derived BChE potentiated the effects of DDVP (an organophosphorus AChE inhibitor) and (b) addition of exogenous BChE (*fSmBChE1*) mitigated the effects of DDVP. Inhibition of AChE in extracts by DDVP significantly increased in the presence of increasing amounts of the BChE inhibitor, iso-OMPA (Fig 3.8A) and DDVP-mediated killing of schistosomula was significantly increased in the presence of iso-OMPA (60.9% compared with 21.8%;  $P < 0.0001$ ) (Fig 3.8B) and in *SmBChE*-silenced parasites (83.44% compared with 22.95%;  $P < 0.0001$ ) (Fig 3.8C). Conversely, DDVP-induced inhibition of AChE in extracts was completely ablated in the presence of *fSmBChE* (Fig 3.8D) and schistosomula were increasingly resistant to DDVP-mediated killing with the addition of increasing amounts of recombinant protein to the culture media (Fig 3.8E).





**Fig 3.8. *SmBChE1* bio-scavenges DDVP and protects parasites against DDVP-induced effects.**(A)

Schistosomula extracts were treated with DDVP (1 µM), or pretreated with iso-OMPA (1 and 2 mM) and then DDVP, before assaying AChE activity. (B) Schistosomula were treated with DDVP (1 µM) or pretreated with iso-OMPA (100 µM) and then DDVP, and parasite viability measured 5 h after treatment.

(C) *SmBChE1*-silenced or luciferase siRNA-treated schistosomula were treated with DDVP (1 µM) and parasite viability measured 5 h after treatment. (D) Schistosomula extracts were pre-incubated with f*SmBChE1* (10 µg) then treated with DDVP (1 µM), or treated with DDVP alone, before assaying AChE activity.

(E) DDVP was pre-incubated with f*SmBChE1* (10, 5 and 2.5 µg) or 10 µg of *SmTSP2* for 1 h before being used to treat schistosomula. Parasite viability was measured 24

h post-treatment. For all assays, data are the average of triplicate biological and technical experiments  $\pm$  SEM and differences were measured by the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ , \*\*\*\* $P \leq 0.0001$ .

### 3.4 Discussion

Cholinesterase (ChE) activity in *S. mansoni* was first described by Bueding in 1952 (Bueding 1952) and was well characterized biochemically in the four decades succeeding this discovery. The technological limitations of this time period meant that most of the evidence for *SmChEs* came from whole worm studies and analyses of crude parasite extracts (reviewed in (Arnon et al. 1999)), which could not ascribe ChE activity to any particular protein. Several studies in the early 2000's characterized a single AChE from *S. mansoni* (Smp\_154600 in the current gene annotation nomenclature) and its direct homolog in other species of schistosomes (Jones et al. 2002; Bentley et al. 2003; Bentley et al. 2005) but lack of a comprehensive schistosome genome annotation precluded identification of more ChE family members. Interrogation of the most recent iteration of the *S. mansoni* genome assembly has identified two additional ChE-encoding genes that are paralogs to Smp\_154600 (termed *SmAChE1*); Smp\_125350 (*SmBChE1*) and Smp\_136690 (*SmAChE3*). In this current study, I have provided a more in-depth characterization of the previously documented *SmAChE1* and described two novel ChEs from *S. mansoni*: *SmAChE3* – an AChE not reported before – and *SmBChE1* – a BChE which, to the best of our knowledge, has never been documented in the helminth literature.

All *SmChEs* share a modest level of identity which is consistent with their divergence over evolutionary time, an occurrence possibly due to a series of gene duplications as each paralog's clade is distant from one other. This divergence between *SmChEs* and, also, *ChEs* of other organisms, provides evidence for the increasing reports of non-cholinergic functions appearing for *ChEs* in the literature. Additionally, the relative lack of sequence identity between *SmChEs* and human *ChEs* suggests potential scope for the development of intervention strategies targeting schistosome *ChEs* that will not affect the host. Despite the diversity between *ChEs*, all enzymes analyzed would appear to be enzymatically active as they possessed a catalytic triad with an active site serine, the amino acid responsible for ester hydrolysis (Dvir et al. 2010). It is interesting to note, however, the catalytic triad His – Gln substitution in *SmBChE1* (and the other platyhelminth *BChE1* homologs); while this change is not a hallmark of model *BChEs*, that it occurs within an entire parasite lineage is remarkable and will be investigated further.

The transcript levels of *SmChEs* varied among parasite developmental stages and this is likely a response to the differing cholinergic and cholinesterase-independent needs of the parasite throughout its lifecycle. For example, *SmAChE1* is expressed at a relatively higher level in adult males compared to females, probably due to the more “muscular” roles of attachment and movement orchestrated by the male compared to the female, which remains sedentary once inside gynecophoric groove of the male (Basch 1990). *SmBChE1* expression was the highest in eggs; there is evidence for *BChE* involvement in chicken embryo neurogenesis and development, independent of its enzymatic function (Mack et al. 2000), which suggests that *SmBChE1* could

play a role in parasite embryogenesis. The miracidia and sporocyst stages had the highest levels of *SmAChE3* expression, in agreement with Parker-Manuel et al (Parker-Manuel et al. 2011).

Immunolocalization of the *SmChEs* revealed expression in the neuromusculature and tegument to varying degrees, depending on the paralog, and is consistent with early localization experiments (Espinoza et al. 1991), although the antibodies used in those studies were raised against AChEs purified from parasite extracts and so the localization could not be attributed to a specific family member. Localization to the neuromusculature relates to the proteins' traditional cholinergic functions whereas tegumental distribution is suggestive of more non-neuronal cholinergic and/or non-cholinergic roles. Indeed, surface-expressed *SmAChE* has been implicated in mediating glucose scavenging by the parasite as this process can be ablated by membrane-impermeable AChE inhibitors (Camacho et al. 1995; Sundaraneedi et al. 2017). Tegumental *SmAChE* may also act to hydrolyze exogenous ACh, neutralizing its immune-mediating function to create an environment more conducive to parasite establishment (Vaux et al. 2016). The localization of these antigens to the tegument of schistosomula should also be noted since early developing schistosomula are considered most vulnerable to immune attack (Gobert et al. 2007) and so *SmAChE*-targeted immunotherapeutics could be used effectively to vaccinate against schistosomiasis. Indeed, antibodies against *SmAChEs* have been shown to interact with the molecules on the surface of schistosomula, resulting in complement-dependent killing of the parasite (Arnon et al. 1987).

Full-length and functional *SmChEs* were expressed in *P. pastoris*. *SmAChE1* had preferred substrate specificity for AcSCh over BcSCh, albeit at a three-fold less affinity than previously reported for *SmAChE1* expressed in *Xenopus laevis* oocytes (Bentley et al. 2005). *SmAChE3* also had a substrate preference for AcSCh and an affinity twice that of *SmAChE1*. Extremely low enzyme activity was observed with *SmBChE1* when AcSCh was used as a substrate, which significantly increased with the use of BcSCh. Although sequence alignment of *SmBChE1* with the other two *SmChEs* revealed a single amino acid substitution in the PAS (Glu – Trp), acyl binding pocket (Val – Leu) and catalytic triad (His – Gln), it was unclear whether these changes alone were enough to classify *SmBChE1* as a BChE. Based on the significant difference in substrate preference, however, this classification would appear valid. Cloning of a recombinant BChE from *S. mansoni* is consistent with our observations of BChE activity in parasite extracts. *S. mansoni* schistosomula exhibited significantly more activity than adults, as did *S. mansoni* compared to *S. haematobium* adults. It has been reported that *S. mansoni* is more sensitive to the BChE inhibitor, iso-OMPA, than *S. haematobium* (Camacho et al. 1994) and it may be because there is an increased BChE activity in *S. mansoni*. Indeed, this relationship has been documented between AChE and metrifonate (precursor of DDVP used in this study); *S. haematobium* is more sensitive to the inhibitor than *S. mansoni* because of the greater amount of AChE on the worm's surface (Camacho et al. 1994).

For the first time, I document the presence of secretory *SmChE* activity in schistosomes and AChE activity was highest in cercarial ES products. Of the intra-mammalian stages tested, AChE activity was highest in schistosomula and adults and may be acting to bind and neutralize exogenous AChE inhibitors (Mackintosh 2004) (thus protecting tegumental and somatic AChE) or host-derived ACh to mitigate the immunomodulatory effects of this molecule. Extending this hypothesis, ES products from cultured females had lower AChE activity than males and could be due to females' worm having less of a requirement for this defensive mechanism as they reside in relative shelter of the gynaecophoric canal. BChE activity was present in the ES products of adults, schistosomula and cercariae and was significantly higher in the intra-mammalian larval stage than the other two stages. The *SmChE* molecules present in ES were isolated by purification on edrophonium (a ChE inhibitor) sepharose and, consistent with the class of activity observed in ES, identified by mass spectrometry as *SmAChE1* and *SmBChE1*; the former being forty-fold more abundant than the latter.

It is generally accepted that vertebrate BChE has a predominant role in the detoxification of ingested or inhaled drugs and poisons such as the AChE-inhibitory organophosphorus esters that constitute nerve agents and pesticides due to the binding of the enzyme to these molecules [reviewed in (Lockridge 2015)]. Inactivation of *SmBChE1* in parasite extracts and live schistosomula by the BChE inhibitor iso-OMPA or through RNAi-mediated silencing potentiated the effects of DDVP whereas addition of exogenous *SmBChE1* mitigated the effects, suggesting a similar detoxification role exists for schistosome BChE as for the vertebrate enzyme. The

localization of *SmBChE1* to the tegument and its presence in ES products may further support this hypothesis as the enzyme would be spatially available to interact with toxins present in the host environment and safeguarding parasite AChE against AChE inhibitors. Moreover, BChE activity is higher in *S. mansoni* than *S. haematobium*, which is more sensitive to the effects of the organophosphorus AChE inhibitor metrifonate; it has been reported that this sensitivity is due to the larger amount of tegumental AChE present in *S. haematobium* (Camacho et al. 1994), but it may also be due to the reduced amount of BChE available to detoxify the inhibitor as a similar relationship has been reported in studies which use human BChE to counter organophosphate toxicity (Saxena et al. 2006). Plasma-derived human BChE is currently in phase I clinical trial to as a nerve agent detoxifier and a recombinant human BChE mutant is being used to prevent relapse in cocaine addicts due to the enzyme's ability to hydrolyze the drug into inactive by-products (Lockridge 2015). One of the major limitations of these approaches, however, is the catalytic turnover of human BChE (Lockridge 2015) and so there is a research focus into the identification of BChE homologs from other organisms, such as *SmBChE1*, that might act better as detoxification agents in this regard.

Inhibition of BChE in the absence of DDVP results in parasite death so a bio-scavenging role is possibly not the only function of this enzyme. Indeed, vertebrate BChE has also been shown to have roles in (1) ACh hydrolysis in situations of AChE deficiency (Boudinot et al. 2005), (2) fat metabolism by hydrolyzing the feeding stimulant peptide octanoyl ghrelin (De Vriese et al. 2004)

and (3) scavenging polyproline-rich peptides to regulate protein-protein and protein-DNA interactions (Adzhubei et al. 2013).

In summary, the work herein has identified multiple ChE paralogs in the genome of *S. mansoni* where previous studies, making use of the technology available at the time, attributed ChE activity to a single AChE, which I have termed *SmAChE1*. Consistent with previous observations that ChEs are multi-faceted enzymes, I posit that the three ChE paralogs described herein may fulfil distinct neuronal and non-neuronal functions based on their anatomical and temporal expression in the parasite and its ES products and the enzymatic activity of recombinant molecules. The function of *SmBChE1* has been partially addressed by RNAi studies and a more comprehensive RNAi-based study of all three paralogs is described in chapter 4, which may further elucidate the function of these molecules.



**CHAPTER 4**

---

**RNAi-mediated silencing of *SmChEs* affects parasite cholinergic signaling and  
development**

---

## 4.1 Introduction

The nervous system of helminths has been long known to be a potential target for therapeutic agents (Ribeiro et al. 2012; Ribeiro et al. 2013) as it plays several **crucial** roles in parasite biology that are fundamental to survival, including coordinating motility within and outside of the host, feeding and reproduction (Kimber et al. 2005; McVeigh et al. 2005; Ribeiro et al. 2005; Sangster et al. 2005; Vermeire et al. 2005). Further, the *Schistosoma* nervous system is particularly important as this parasite lacks a body cavity and circulating body fluid (Halton et al. 1996; Ribeiro et al. 2010) and, as a result, its signaling functions are chiefly achieved via neurotransmission. The primary neurotransmitter that schistosomes utilize is acetylcholine (ACh), which allows muscle contraction. The physiological concentration of ACh, however, must be maintained otherwise it triggers paralysis (Kimber et al. 2005; McVeigh et al. 2005; Ribeiro et al. 2005).

Acetylcholinesterase (AChE) hydrolyzes excess ACh at the neuromuscular junction between the nervous system and muscles of both vertebrates and invertebrates (Soreq et al. 2001). Without the action of AChEs, uncontrolled influx of ACh causes paralysis and eventually death (Kimber et al. 2005; McVeigh et al. 2005; Ribeiro et al. 2005). Three cholinesterase (ChE) paralogs have been identified from the *S. mansoni* genome (*SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1*, and *SmAChE3* – described in Chapter 3). Yet, it is not clear whether the three *SmChE* genes have distinct and/or overlapping functions and it remains to be determined which one of the three paralogs is an ideal therapeutic target in *Schistosoma*. The ability to inhibit the *SmAChE* paralogs separately with gene silencing techniques may thus be valuable for understanding the distinctive functions of these molecules.

Successful application of RNA interference (RNAi) in various schistosome life stages (reviewed in (Bhardwaj et al. 2011; Da'dara et al. 2015)) highlights the potential of this tool to study the nervous system of this parasite. Indeed, in schistosomes, RNAi has been successfully used to disrupt neurotransmitter transporters (Patocka et al. 2013) as well as neuronal receptors and channels (Patocka et al. 2014; MacDonald et al. 2015). In this chapter, I describe the use of RNAi to knockdown each *SmChE* paralog, in isolation and combination, and examine the impact of this silencing on *SmChE* activity and parasite survival to assess the suitability of each *SmChE* as an intervention target against schistosomiasis.

## **4.2 Materials and Methods**

### **4.2.1 Ethics statement**

All experimental procedures reported in the study were approved by the James Cook University (JCU) animal ethics committee (ethics approval numbers A2391 and A2432). Snails and mice were maintained in the university's quarantine facilities (Q2713 and Q2152, respectively) for the duration of the experiments. The study protocols were in accordance with the 2007 Australian Code of Practice for the Care and Use of Animals for Scientific Purposes and the 2001 Queensland Animal Care and Protection Act.

### **4.2.2 Parasite maintenance**

*Biomphalaria glabrata* snails infected with *S. mansoni* (NMRI strain) were obtained from the Biomedical Research Institute (BRI) and were used as a source of *S. mansoni* cercariae for this

experiment. To obtain cercariae stages, 7-8 weeks old infected snails were set to shed cercariae by exposure to light at 28°C for 1.5 h (Lewis et al. 1986) and were mechanically transformed into schistosomula (Ramalho-Pinto et al. 1974), the developmental stage used for RNAi experiments.

#### **4.2.3 siRNA Design and Synthesis**

Three short interfering RNA duplexes (siRNAs) targeting each of the three identified *SmChE* paralogs (*SmAChE1* - Smp-15460, *SmBChE1* - Smp-125350 and *SmAChE3* - Smp-136690), were designed for gene-specific silencing experiments (Supplementary Table 4.1). Each siRNA was checked to avoid off-target silencing by BLAST searching the *S. mansoni* genome with each sequence. An irrelevant siRNA from firefly luciferase was selected as a negative control (Tran et al. 2010). All selected siRNAs were commercially synthesized (IDT) and oligos were suspended (1 µg/µl) using diethylpyrocarbonate (DEPC) treated water.

#### **4.2.4 Electroporation of schistosomula with siRNA**

Prior to electroporation, mechanically transformed schistosomula were cultured for 24 h (2000 schistosomula/ml, at 37°C and 5% CO<sub>2</sub> in modified Basch medium (Basch 1981) supplemented with 4× AA in 6 well plates. After 3 washes with PBS, schistosomula were re-suspended in modified Basch medium (3000 schistosomula/100 µl) and 3000 schistosomula were transferred into Genepulser 4 mm electroporation cuvettes (Bio-Rad) per siRNA treatment (four) and timepoints (four for each treatment – 1, 3, 5 and 7 days). Schistosomula were electroporated with 10 µg of either luciferase, *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNA or a combination of all

three *SmChE* siRNAs (30 µg total) using a Bio-Rad Gene Pulser Xcell (single 20 ms pulse – 125 V, 25 µF capacitance, 200 Ω resistance, square wave electroporation) at RT, added to 24 well plates containing 1 ml fresh pre-warmed modified Basch medium and incubated (37°C, 5% CO<sub>2</sub>) for 7 days. Schistosomula were harvested at each timepoint and used for either qPCR analysis (to assess transcript knockdown), protein extract preparation (to examine phenotypic knockdown) or Trypan Blue exclusion assays (to determine parasite viability). All parasite material was generated from two independent experiments.

#### **4.2.5 Total RNA isolation, cDNA synthesis, and real-time qPCR**

Schistosomula (1000 parasites) were harvested after day 1, day 3, day 5 and day 7, washed three times in PBS and stored at -80°C until use. Total RNA extraction, cDNA synthesis and RT-qPCR (triplicate assays) were performed as described in section 3.2.5.

#### **4.2.6 Parasite extract preparation**

Schistosomula (2000 parasites) were harvested from each timepoint into 300 µl 0.1% Triton X-100 and stored at -80°C until use. Parasites were homogenized on ice and mixed overnight at 4°C. Homogenates were centrifuged at 15,000 *xg* for 1 h at 4°C, supernatants collected and protein concentration determined using the Pierce BCA Protein Assay kit (Thermofisher), aliquoted and stored at -80°C until use.

#### **4.2.7 AChE and BChE activity assay**

Activity assays were performed as previously described (section 3.2.11) with 15  $\mu\text{g}$  of schistosomula extract. Reactions were carried out in triplicate.

#### **4.2.8 Determination of schistosomula viability**

Schistosomula (100 parasites/replicate) were harvested at each timepoint and viability determined by Trypan Blue exclusion staining (Wangchuk et al. 2016). Briefly, schistosomula were stained with 0.16% Trypan Blue in PBS with gentle shaking for 30 min at RT and then excess stain removed by multiple washes in PBS before fixing in 10% formalin. Parasites were counted under 10x objective and the live parasites (which had not taken up stain) expressed as a percentage of total worms. Each assay was performed in triplicate.

#### **4.2.9 Evaluation of protein expression**

Western blots were performed with day 7 parasite extracts (20  $\mu\text{g}$ ) following standard procedures. The blots were probed with polyclonal *SmChE* antibodies (generated in section 3.2.8). A polyclonal anti-*Sm*-paramyosin antibody (Tran et al. 2010) was used as a loading control.

#### **4.2.10 Glucose uptake of schistosomula treated with siRNA**

Newly transformed schistosomula (5000/treatment) were incubated in complete Basch media for 5 days. Parasites were then washed several times with PBS and transferred to serum-free DMEM. At day 5, all parasites were electroporated with *SmChE* siRNAs (as in section 4.2.4) and transferred into fresh DMEM (1 mg/ml glucose). Media (50  $\mu\text{l}$ ) from each experiment was

collected 48 h post-treatment and the amount of glucose was quantified using a colorimetric glucose assay kit (Sigma) following the manufacturer's instructions. Parasite viability at this timepoint was determined by Trypan Blue exclusion and transcript levels of *SmChEs*, as well as the glucose transporters *SGTP1* and *SGTP4*, were also measured. Glucose levels were normalized according to the number of parasites and expressed relative to the luciferase group. Data is the average of 2 biological and three technical replicates  $\pm$  SEM.

#### **4.2.11 Infection of mice with *SmChE* siRNA-treated schistosomula**

One-day-old cultured schistosomula (10,000) were electroporated in 500  $\mu$ l of modified basch medium with 50  $\mu$ g of either luciferase, *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNA or a combination of all three *SmChE* siRNAs (150  $\mu$ g total) (as in section 4.2.4). Parasites were injected intramuscularly (1,000 each thigh) into male, 6-8 week BALB/c mouse (5 mice per group) using a 23-gauge needle. A control group of mice were similarly injected with non-electroporated schistosomula. Adult worms were perfused 20 days later to assess the number of worms that had matured and reached the mesenteries.

#### **4.2.12 Statistical analyses**

Data were reported as the means  $\pm$  standard error of the mean (SEM). Statistical differences were assessed using the student's *t* test. *P* values less than 0.05 were considered statistically significant.

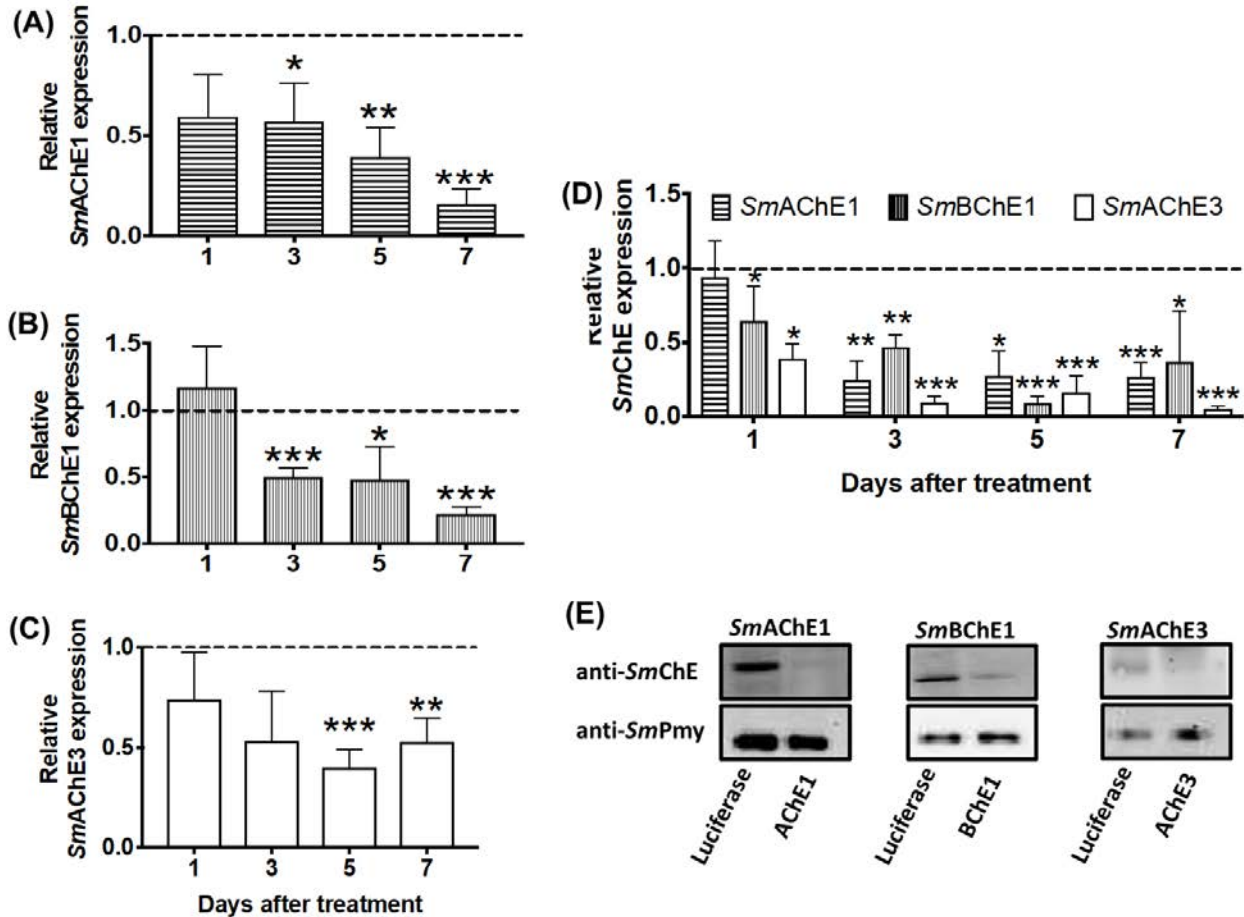
## 4.3 Results

### 4.2.13 *SmChE* transcript reduction and protein suppression

Schistosomula electroporated with *SmAChE1* siRNA showed respective decreases in *SmAChE1* mRNA levels of 55.4% ( $P \leq 0.05$ ) and 81.3% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) at 1 and 7 days post-treatment, respectively, compared to the luciferase control (Fig 4.1A), while treating parasites with *SmBChE1* siRNA caused 32.0% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) and 84.5% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) *SmBChE1* mRNA suppression at day 3 and 7 after electroporation, respectively, compared to the luciferase control (Fig 4.1B). Treatment of schistosomula with *SmAChE3* siRNA resulted in respective decreases in *SmAChE3* mRNA levels of average 27.4% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) and 47.2% ( $P \leq 0.01$ ) 3 and 7 days after electroporation, compared to the luciferase control (Fig 4.1C). Schistosomula electroporated with a cocktail of all three *SmChE* siRNAs showed decreases of all three transcript levels over time, with *SmAChE3* mRNA levels decreasing by an average of 90% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) by day 3 after treatment, compared to the luciferase control (Fig 4.1D).

Seven days after treatment with *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNAs, parasites showed decreases in *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* protein expression of 73%, 59% and 46%, respectively, compared to luciferase controls (Fig 4.1E).





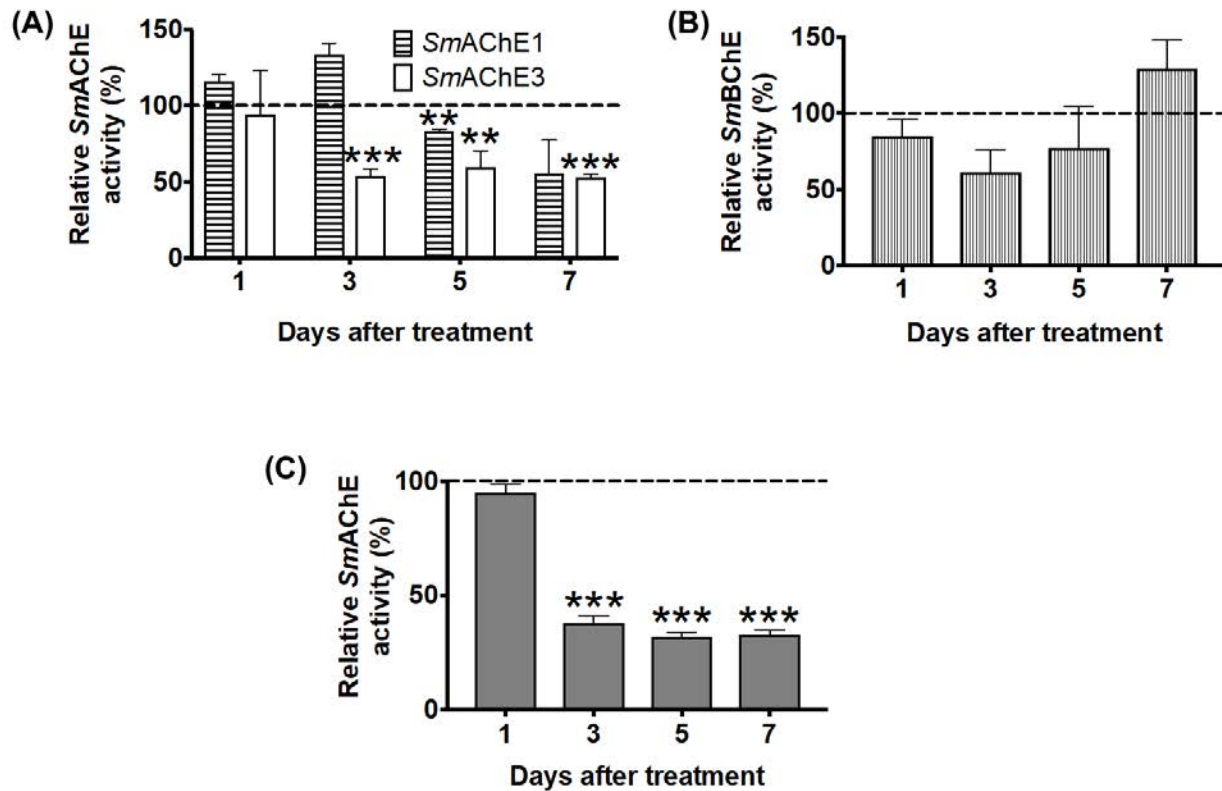
**Fig 4.1. Suppression of *SmChE* mRNA transcript and protein expression in schistosomula by RNAi.**

**(A)** *SmAChE1*, **(B)** *SmBChE1*, **(C)** *SmAChE3* individual siRNA treatment **(D)** treatment with cocktail of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1*, and *SmAChE3* siRNAs. *SmChE* transcript levels in parasites treated with *SmChE* siRNAs are shown relative to *SmChE* transcript expression in schistosomula treated with the luciferase control (mean  $\pm$  SEM of triplicate assays from 2 biological replicates of each treatment). Transcript expression in all parasites was normalized with the housekeeping gene, *SmCOX1*. Differences in transcript levels were measured by the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ . **(E)** Western blot of day 7 schistosomula extracts following treatment with *SmChE* or luciferase siRNAs. Extracts were immunoblotted with the corresponding anti-*SmAChE1*, anti-

*SmBChE* or anti-*SmAChE3* polyclonal antibody. An antibody against *SmPmy* was used as a loading control.

#### **4.2.14 Suppression of *SmChE* activity**

Suppression of AChE activity was seen in *SmAChE1* and *SmAChE3* siRNA-treated parasites at 5 and 3 days after electroporation, respectively (Fig 4.2A), compared to the luciferase control, while schistosomula treated with *SmBChE1* siRNA did not show any significant reduction in BChE activity, even 7 days after electroporation (Fig 4.2B). Parasites electroporated with a cocktail of all 3 *SmChE* siRNAs showed significant decreases in AChE activity at 3 days (62% reduction,  $P \leq 0.001$ ), 5 days (67% reduction,  $P \leq 0.001$ ) and 7 day (71% reduction,  $P \leq 0.001$ ) after treatment (Fig 4.2C). BChE activity was not measured in the cocktail siRNA treatment group.

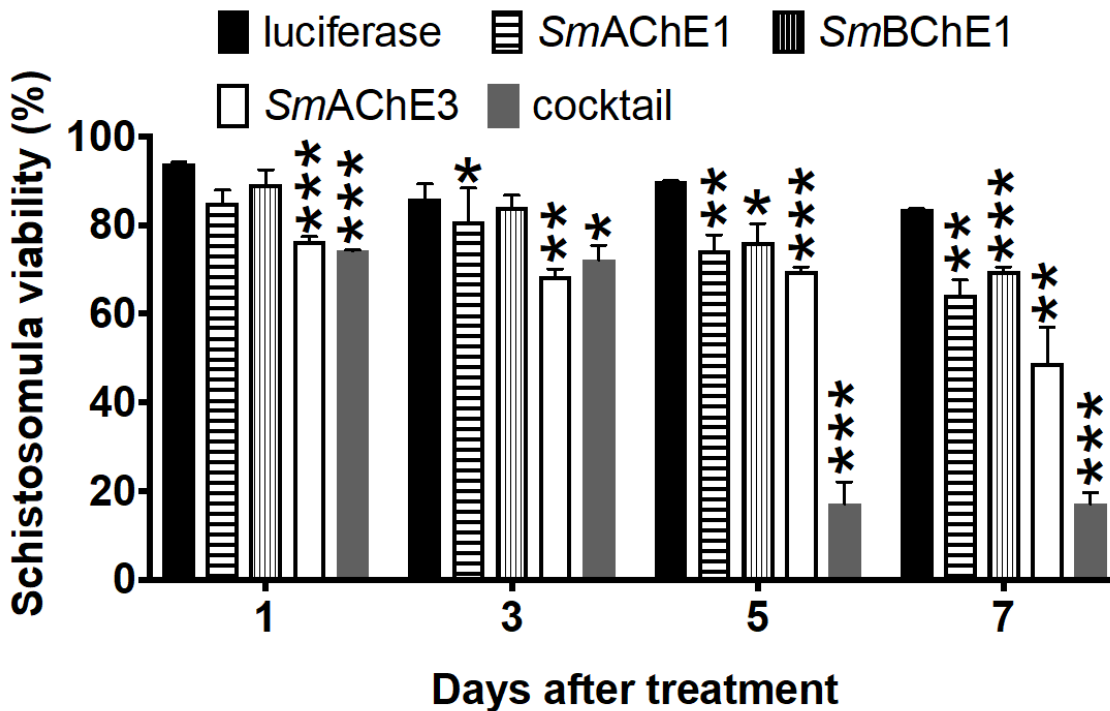


**Fig 4.2. Effects of *SmChE* knockdown on cholinesterase activity.** (A) AChE activity of parasites treated with *SmAChE1*, *SmAChE3* or luciferase siRNA (dashed line). (B) The BChE activity of parasites treated with *SmBChE1* or luciferase siRNA (dashed line). (C) AChE activity of parasites treated with all 3 siRNAs or luciferase siRNA (dashed line). Data represents mean  $\pm$  SEM of duplicate assays from 2 biological replicates of each treatment. Differences were measured by the student's *t* test. \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ .

#### 4.2.15 Suppression of parasite viability

Parasites treated with *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNA showed significant decreases in viability at day 3, 5 and 1 after treatment, respectively, compared to luciferase controls. At day 5

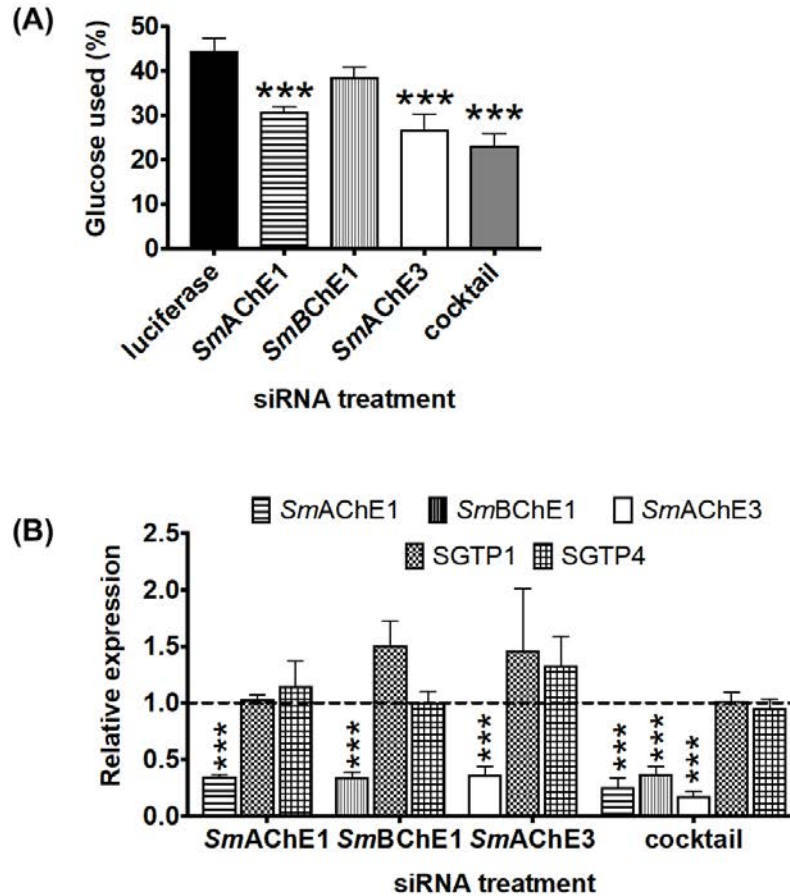
and 7 post-treatment, the most significant decreases in parasite viability was seen in the group which received the cocktail siRNA treatment, compared to luciferase controls. Further, viability in this group was also significantly lower than any individual treatment at these two time periods.



**Fig 4.3. Effects of *SmChE* silencing on schistosomula viability.** Schistosomula treated with (A) individual or (B) all 3 siRNAs were cultured for 7 days in complete Basch medium with viability determined at day 1, 3, 5 and 7 after treatment by Trypan Blue exclusion (mean  $\pm$  SEM of duplicate assays from 2 biological replicates of each treatment. Differences in viability between *SmChE* and luciferase treated groups and individual and cocktail treated groups were measured by the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ .

#### 4.2.16 RNAi-mediated suppression of glucose uptake

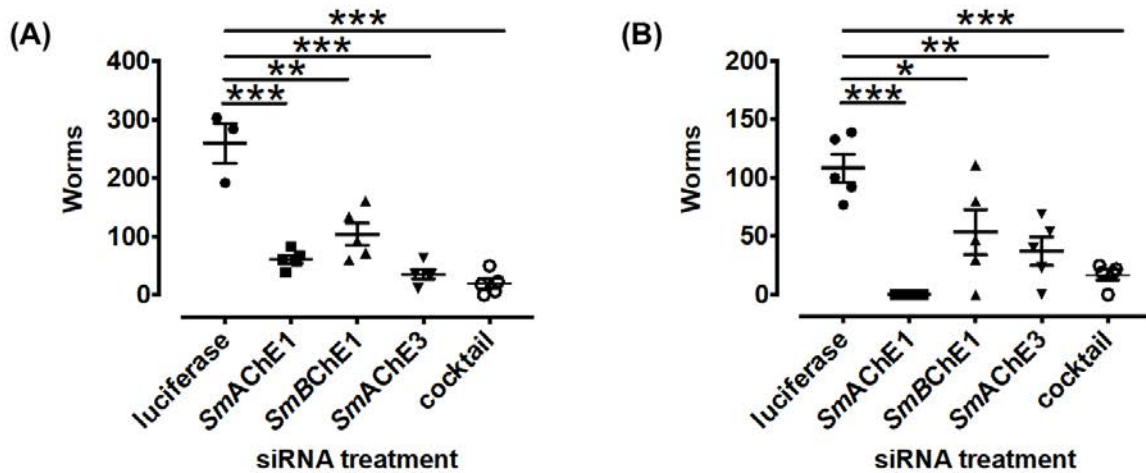
Individual silencing of *SmAChE1* or *SmAChE3* and combined silencing of all three *SmChEs* reduced glucose uptake in schistosomula by 24.9% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ), 32.34% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) and 38.61% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) at 48 h post-treatment, respectively, relative to the luciferase control. However, *SmBChE1*-silenced parasites showed no significant changes in glucose uptake at the same timepoint. There was no difference in the glucose consumed by the *SmAChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNA-treated groups compared with the cocktail siRNA-treated group (Fig 4.4A). Transcript levels of the glucose transporters, SGTP1 and SGTP4, were neither decreased nor significantly increased in individual or cocktail *SmChE*-silenced parasites (Fig 4.4B).



**Fig 4.4. Schistosome glucose uptake is affected by *SmChE* suppression. (A)** Glucose uptake by *S. mansoni* schistosomula 48 h after treatment with *SmChE* siRNAs. Schistosomula (5 days old - 5000/treatment) were electroporated with either luciferase or *SmChE* siRNA and glucose consumption normalized by parasite viability was measured 48 h after treatment. **(B)** Transcript levels of glucose transporters SGTP1 and SGTP4 and *SmChEs* in individual and cocktail *SmChE*-siRNA treatment parasites, relative to luciferase-treated controls (dashed line). Data are representative of the mean  $\pm$  SEM of two independent experiments. *P* values were calculated using the student's *t* test. \**p* value  $\leq$  0.05, \*\**p* value  $\leq$  0.01, \*\*\**p* value  $\leq$  0.001.

#### **4.2.17 *SmChEs* are essential for parasite development and survival in mammalian hosts**

To examine whether RNAi-mediated *SmChE* suppression reduced parasite viability *in vivo*, mice were infected with *SmChE*-silenced parasites and worm burdens measured after three weeks. From two independent experiments, there was an average 88.15%, 55.15%, 75.95% and 88.35% decrease in worm burden from mice infected with *SmAChE1*-, *SmBChE1*-, *SmAChE3*- and *SmChE* cocktail-silenced parasites, respectively, compared to mice infected with luciferase-treated parasites. All worm burden decreases were significant and there was no significant difference between mice infected with luciferase-treated and non-electroporated control parasites. There was no longer any difference in *SmChE* transcript levels from recovered parasites (data not shown) and all mice had been successfully infected with parasites, as serum from necropsied mice contained parasite-specific antibodies (data not shown).



**Fig 4.5. Silencing of *SmChEs* suppresses parasite establishment *in vivo*.**

One-day-old schistosomula were treated with *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* siRNA, a cocktail of all three *SmChE* siRNAs, or luciferase siRNA and then intramuscularly injected (2,000 parasites) into mice. Non-electroporated parasites were similarly used as controls. After 3 weeks, adult worms were recovered and counted. Data from two independent experiments (A and B) are shown. Significant differences were determined using the student's *t* test. \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ .

#### 4.4 Discussion

RNA interference (RNAi) is a mechanism employed by most eukaryotic cells to control coding transcript levels of targeted genes which, in turn, results in downregulation of targeted protein expression (Ndegwa et al. 2007; Da'dara et al. 2015). Schistosomes have the cellular machinery to carry out this gene-specific targeting of protein expression (Krautz-Peterson et al. 2008) and so RNAi has been used to characterize schistosome proteins through loss of function studies



(Krautz-Peterson et al. 2008; Krautz-Peterson et al. 2010; Patocka et al. 2014). Further, and relevant to this study, RNAi has been used to disrupt schistosome neurotransmitter transporters (Patocka et al. 2013) and neuronal receptors and channels (Patocka et al. 2014; MacDonald et al. 2015). Accordingly, this gene-silencing method was used to determine the functionality and essentiality of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* and *SmAChE3* through targeted knockdown, either individually or in combination, with a view to validating these proteins as therapeutic targets against schistosomiasis.

Treatment of schistosomula with *SmChE* siRNAs, either individually or in combination, resulted in transcriptional suppression of each target by at least 50% three days after electroporation. Knockdown had increased at each timepoint until termination of the experiment at day 7 post-treatment, and there was a comparable reduction in protein expression of each paralog at this time, indicating that silencing of *SmChE* genes can be achieved effectively by siRNA-mediated RNAi and demonstrating the feasibility of simultaneous transcript suppression in schistosomes.

*SmAChE1*- and *SmAChE3*-silenced parasites showed decreases in AChE activity, consistent with reductions in transcript and protein expression levels. Moreover, inhibition of this biochemical activity was greater in schistosomula treated with the *SmChE* siRNA cocktail than parasites receiving any of the individual treatments, further evidence suggestive of simultaneous silencing of *SmAChEs*. AChE activity inhibition in *SmAChE3*-silenced parasites was more pronounced than in *SmAChE1*-silenced parasites, which was inconsistent with protein level reductions and this may be due to the increased AChE activity reported for *SmAChE1* ( $V_{max} = 5.57$  nmol/min/mg,  $K_m =$

5.83 mM) compared to *SmAChE3* ( $V_{max} = 5.59$  nmol/min/mg,  $K_m = 10.87$  mM) (section 3.3.5). It is also possible that there may not be a direct correlation between AChE activity and protein expression, given that additional, non-cholinergic functions have been ascribed to ChEs (Camacho et al. 1995; Lee 1996; Soreq et al. 2001). This may also be the reason why no significant decrease in BChE activity was observed in *SmBChE1*-silenced parasites, despite significant reductions in transcript and protein expression levels.

Individual *SmChE* silencing each resulted in significant decreases in parasite viability at various timepoints after treatment with *SmAChE3*-silenced parasites showing the most significant decrease in viability most quickly after treatment. *SmAChE3* is the only one of the *SmChE* paralogs studied whose expression is remarkably upregulated between *S. mansoni* cercariae and schistosomula (Parker-Manuel et al. 2011), an observation consistent with qPCR data (section 3.3.2), and so silencing this relatively highly expressed gene may have the most profound effects of all *SmChE* silencing on parasite viability. The viability of parasites treated with all three *SmChE* siRNAs was significantly decreased compared to parasites treated with an individual siRNA, suggestive of the fact that functional overlap exists between the paralogs. This redundancy has been documented in AChE-knockout mice where BChE has the ability to hydrolyze ACh in the absence of AChE (Li et al. 2000; Mesulam et al. 2002). Moreover, AChE deletion is found to be lethal in *Drosophila* only because there is no alternative BChE paralog to compensate for the lack of ACh hydrolysis (Greenspan et al. 1980; Xie et al. 2000). Similar to the observations in this study, simultaneous knockdown of multiple ChE genes have been reported to have deleterious effects

on their target organisms including the insects *Plutella xylostella* (Smith et al. 2012), *Chilo suppressalis* (X.-M. et al. 2011) and *Tribolium castaneum* (Lu et al. 2012) and the nematodes *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* (Hussein et al. 2002) and *Caenorhabditis elegans* (Johnson et al. 1988). Similarly, chemotherapy with “broad spectrum” ChE inhibitors has shown to be effective against a range of organisms, including pest insects (Lang et al. 2012), schistosomes (Davis et al. 1969; Bueding et al. 1972; Feldmeier et al. 1982; Sundaraneedi et al. 2017) and *Trichuris suis* parasites (Sundaraneedi et al. 2018). It is likely that the simultaneous silencing of the *SmChE* genes in this study has a profound effect on parasite viability due to the knockdown of cholinergic signaling, a process to which all paralogs contribute, as they have all been shown to hydrolyze ChE substrates (section 3.3.5). Also possible is that knockdown of these three genes might have also resulted in the ablation of multiple other functions that have been suggested for these molecules (Pritchard 1993; Soreq et al. 2001; Lu et al. 2012). Whatever the reason, it is evident that the targeting of all these paralogs may be necessary in the development of an intervention strategy against schistosomiasis.

Previous studies have documented the involvement of *SmChEs* in the uptake of exogenous glucose by schistosomes through the ablation of the glucose uptake pathway by organophosphorus (Camacho et al. 1994) and large molecule (Sundaraneedi et al. 2017) AChE inhibitors so I sought to identify the *SmChE* paralog(s) responsible for this mediation through the use of RNAi targeting *SmChE* genes. Individual *SmChE* gene knockdown of *SmAChE1* and *SmAChE3* suppressed glucose uptake in schistosomula, implying that both genes were involved

in regulation of this mechanism. Tegumental AChE is speculated to mediate glucose uptake by limiting the interaction of ACh with tegumental nicotinic ACh receptors which is thought to decrease the amount of glucose uptake through surface glucose transporters and so the fact that both molecules are localized to the tegument (section 3.3.4) and can hydrolyze ACh (section 3.3.5) provide evidence for their role in this pathway. *SmBChE1*-silenced parasites did not show any difference in glucose uptake and is probably reflective of the molecule's limited role in ACh hydrolysis (section 3.3.5). Transcript levels of SGTP1 and SGTP4 were not significantly increased in *SmAChE1*- and *SmAChE3*-silenced parasites, suggesting that *SmAChEs* may facilitate glucose uptake in a manner which does not directly involve glucose transporters. Indeed, at least in nematodes, AChEs have been proposed to be involved in altering the permeability of surrounding host cells, allowing nutrients (such as glucose) to leak into the parasite niche and be uptaken (Lee 1970).

Given that suppression of *SmChEs* affected parasite viability and inhibited biochemical activity *in vitro*, it was decided to examine whether the establishment of *SmChE*-silenced schistosomula would be impaired *in vivo*. Worm recovery from mice infected with all groups of *SmChE*-silenced parasites was significantly less than controls, indicating that suppression of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* could inhibit schistosome establishment and/or development in the host. Viability of silenced parasites was decreased in *in vivo* compared to *in vitro* experiments. It may be that *in vitro* killing of parasites silenced for individual *SmChEs* could have been achieved had the experiment been conducted for longer than 7 days. Another possible explanation is that *SmChE*

silencing may be more “effective” *in vivo* as knockdown is inhibiting processes that are influenced by host biology and not evident in an *in vitro* system. For example, it has been indirectly shown that the nematode *N. brasiliensis* employs parasite-derived AChE to alter the host cytokine environment so as to be more favorable to worm survival (Vaux et al. 2016); the consequence of silencing this interaction could only be observed *in vivo* and not through the use of an *in vitro* RNAi experiment. This contrast between *in vitro* and *in vivo* RNAi experimental results has been observed previously in schistosomes; Krautz-Peterson et al (Krautz-Peterson et al. 2010) have shown that, while the mortality of schistosomula silenced for the glucose transporters SGTP1 and SGTP4 was unaffected *in vitro*, similarly silenced parasites displayed an impaired ability to establish infection when introduced into mice. Further, and consistent with *in vitro* data, schistosomula silenced for all three *SmChEs* exhibited the highest mortality *in vivo* when worm recovery was averaged across the two independent trials, suggesting that, not only is simultaneous knockdown of *SmChEs* required to overcome any functional redundancy between the molecules, this treatment has the largest impact on parasite pathogenesis due to the inhibition of multiple biological functions collectively orchestrated by these proteins.

*SmChE* transcript levels of silenced worms recovered from mice were no different from control parasites and it is likely that the surviving worms were parasites which received less siRNA than others in the population, resulting in less gene suppression, and/or recovered from the effects of RNAi, which is a transient treatment. CRISPR/Cas9 technology offers an advantage over RNAi in that it permanently “knocks out” the targeted gene by introducing mutations in the genome of

an organism and the recent application of this procedure to schistosomes (Ittiprasert et al. 2018) means that the functions of biologically important molecules such as *SmChEs* can be comprehensively deciphered using *in vivo* models of schistosomiasis due to the permanent silencing effects of this technology.

Taken together, these results confirm that *SmChEs* are essential for parasite survival, a claim reinforced by numerous studies in a variety of organism where suppression of AChE genes affected survivability (Kumar et al. 2009; X.-M. et al. 2011; He et al. 2012; Gong et al. 2013; Malik et al. 2016; Kishk et al. 2017; Ye et al. 2017). While ChEs have previously been validated as lethal chemotherapeutic target in *Schistosoma spp* (Davis et al. 1969; Bueding et al. 1972; Hillman et al. 1975; Feldmeier et al. 1982; Sundaraneedi et al. 2017), this study is the first report on the effect of ChE gene silencing on the *in vivo* development of any *Schistosoma spp*. Given the essentiality of *SmChEs*, determined by the RNAi studies in this chapter, the vaccine efficacy of recombinant *SmChEs* will be explored in Chapter 5.

**CHAPTER 5**

---

**Vaccine efficacy of recombinant *S. mansoni* cholinesterases in a mouse model of  
schistosomiasis**

---

## 5.1. Introduction

Despite decades of concentrated research, there is still no effective and practical vaccine against schistosomiasis (Egesa et al. 2017). Further, mass chemotherapy using praziquantel (PZQ), the only effective anti-schistosomal drug, is complicated by rapid and frequent re-infection (Mduluzi et al. 2001). There is also evidence that resistance to PZQ is emerging (Crellen et al. 2016). So far, a considerable number of schistosome antigens have been identified and tested as vaccines and, although a number of these vaccine candidates (for example *SmTSP-2*, *Sm14*, *Sm29*, *SmCB1* and *Smp80*) have shown promising efficacy in animals models and are in various stages of pre-clinical or clinical development, none has been approved for licensure [reviewed in (Tebeje et al. 2016)].

Due to the fundamental roles they play in parasite biology (reviewed in (Arnon et al. 1999), schistosome cholinesterases (*SmChEs*) have been posited as intervention targets against schistosomiasis and there are several indications to support the feasibility of their use as vaccines. Firstly, *SmChEs* have been localized to the tegument of schistosomula and adult worms (Espinoza et al. 1991) (Chapter 3) and anti-*SmChE* antibodies have been shown to bind to and kill schistosomula (Arnon et al. 1987), suggesting that the enzymes are accessible to immune attack. Anti-*SmChE* antibodies also showed no cross-reactivity against human AChE (Espinoza et al. 1991), indicating that a vaccine safe for human use could be designed. Thirdly, protein array studies have detected significantly high levels of antibodies to *SmChEs* in humans exhibiting resistance and low pathology to schistosomiasis, suggesting an involvement of these antibodies in a protective anti-schistosomal response (Pearson et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016).



Lastly, RNAi-mediated suppression of ChEs in both *S. mansoni* (Chapter 4) and *S. japonicum* (You et al. 2018) revealed that the enzymes are essential for parasite survival. However, it remains to be determined which *SmChE* paralogs are effective vaccine targets in *S. mansoni*, particularly as there appears to be some functional redundancy between the enzymes (Chapter 3).

Herein, I have demonstrated that purified IgG against each of the three *SmChE* paralogs identified in chapter 3 inhibit ChE activity in both larval and adult worms *in vitro*, which results in eventual parasite death. Further, I document the efficacy of these *SmChEs*, when administered as recombinant vaccines in isolation or as a triple combination, in reducing parasite burden, stunting worm growth and decreasing egg viability.

## 5.2. Material and Methods

### 5.2.1. Ethics statement

All experimental procedures reported in the study was approved by the James Cook University (JCU) animal ethics (Ethics approval numbers A2391). Mice were maintained in cages in the university's quarantine facility (Q2152) for the duration of the experiments. The study protocols were in accordance with the 2007 Australian Code of Practice for the Care and Use of Animals for Scientific Purposes and the 2001 Queensland Animal Care and Protection Act.

### 5.2.2. Parasites

*Biomphalaria glabrata* snails infected with *S. mansoni* (NMRI strain) were obtained from the

Biomedical Research Institute (BRI) and cercariae were shed by exposure to light at 28°C for 1.5 h (Ramalho-Pinto et al. 1974). Cercariae were mechanically transformed to obtain schistosomula (Ramalho-Pinto et al. 1974). To obtain adult worms, 6-8 week old male BALB/c mice (Animal Resource Centre, WA) were infected with 180 cercariae via tail penetration and parasites harvested by vascular perfusion at 7-8 weeks post-infection (Lewis et al. 1986).

### **5.2.3. Recombinant protein expression and purification**

Recombinant *SmChE* subunit proteins (p*SmChEs*) were expressed in *E. coli* BL21 (DE3) and purified by IMAC, as described in Section 3.2.6-3.2.7.

### **5.2.4. Effect of polyclonal anti-*SmChE* IgG on larval worms**

Newly transformed schistosomula (1000/ml) were cultured in DMEM (supplemented with 4x AA) at 37°C and 5% CO<sub>2</sub> in the presence of 50 µg of either anti-*SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* or *SmAChE3* polyclonal IgG (section 3.2.8) or a combination of all three antibodies (equal amounts - 50 µg total). Separate sets of parasites were similarly incubated with 50 µg of naïve mouse IgG, which served as a control. After 2 and 14 h (separate experiments were conducted for each timepoint), surface and secreted ChE activity was measured by Ellmann assay (section 3.2.11) by incubating the parasites in assay buffer for 1h and schistosomula viability determined by Trypan Blue exclusion (section 2.x). Enzyme activities of IgG-treated parasites were expressed relative to parasites cultured with naïve IgG (negative control). Data are presented as the average of two biological and three technical replicates ± SEM.

### **5.2.5. Effect of polyclonal anti-*SmChE* IgG on adult worms**

Enzyme inhibitory effects 24 h after addition of IgG were measured as for schistosomula using 5 pairs of freshly perfused adult worms in 1 ml of media. Data are presented as the average of two biological and two technical (four total) replicates  $\pm$  SEM. To investigate the effects of polyclonal anti-*SmChE* IgG on worm viability, ten pairs of worms were similarly incubated with antibodies for 10 days, monitored every 24 h for motility by microscopic examination and considered dead if no movement was seen. Glucose uptake was also measured calorimetrically using a glucose assay kit (Sigma) as described earlier (section 2.17), 24 h after antibody addition. Glucose levels were expressed relative to media collected from worms which received naïve IgG (negative control). Data are presented as the average of two biological replicates  $\pm$  SEM.

### **5.2.6. Anti-*SmChE* IgG responses in *S. mansoni*-infected mice during infection and before and after PZQ treatment**

Sera from *S. mansoni* infected male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) (n=5) was collected at day 3, 14, 28, 42 and 56 post infection (p.i.) to assess anti-*SmChE* responses during the course of parasite infection. In a separate experiment, sera from *S. mansoni* infected male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) (n=11) was collected at 5 weeks p.i. and then mice were treated orally with PZQ (100 mg/kg) at 35, 37 and 39 days p.i. Sera was again collected at day 49 p.i. (2 weeks post-PZQ treatment). Anti-*SmChE* responses during infection and before and after PZQ treatment were screened by ELISA with plated p*SmChEs* (100 ng/well) using standard methods. The cutoff value for each dilution

was established as three times the mean OD of the naïve sera for that dilution and the endpoint was defined as the highest dilution above the cutoff value.

### **5.2.7. Vaccine trials**

Five groups of 10 male BALB/c mice (6-8 weeks) were immunized intraperitoneally on day 1 (50 µg/mouse) with either pSmAChE1, pSmBChE1, pSmAChE3, a combination of all three pSmChEs (17 µg each - 50 µg total) or PBS, each formulated with an equal volume of Imject alum adjuvant (ThermoFisher) and 5 µg of CpG ODN1826 (InvivoGen). Immunizations were repeated on day 15 and 29 and each mouse was challenged (abdominal penetration) with 120 *S. mansoni* cercariae on day 43. Two independent trials were performed to ensure reproducibility. Blood was sampled at day 28 and 42 and on the day of a necropsy to determine pre- and post-challenge antibody titers.

#### **5.2.7.1 Mouse necropsy and estimation of worm and egg burden:**

Mice were necropsied at day 91 (7 weeks post-infection) and worms harvested by vascular perfusion and counted. Livers were removed and halved, with one half weighed and digested for 5 h with 5% KOH at 37°C with shaking. Schistosome eggs from digested livers were concentrated by centrifugation at 1,000 g for 10 minutes and re-suspended in 1 ml of 10% formalin. The number of eggs in a 5 µl aliquot was counted in triplicate and the number of eggs per gram (EPG) of the liver was calculated. Small intestines were removed and cleaned of debris before

being weighed and digested as per the liver halves. Eggs were also similarly concentrated and counted to calculate intestinal EPG.

#### **5.2.7.2 Egg viability assays**

The other half of each liver was pooled according to the group, homogenized in H<sub>2</sub>O and placed in identical foil-covered volumetric flasks under bright light to hatch eggs released from the livers. After 1 h, the number of miracidia in 10 x 50 µl aliquots of H<sub>2</sub>O (sampled from the extreme top of each flask) were counted. The number of eggs in each flask at the start of the hatching experiment was determined by liver EPG calculations, allowing the egg hatching index of each group to be calculated by expressing the hatched eggs (miracidia) as a percentage of the total eggs.

#### **5.2.7.3 Glucose consumption and glycogen storage assays**

Five pairs of freshly perfused worms from each vaccinated group were cultured in DMEM (1000 mg/l glucose). Media (50 µl) from each experiment was collected after 24 h, and the amount of glucose was quantified using a colorimetric glucose assay kit (Sigma) according to the manufacturer's instructions. Glucose levels were expressed relative to media collected from worms, recovered from PBS treated mice (negative control). To measure the glycogen content of the same worms used for glucose uptake assay were used for Triton X-100-soluble extraction and assayed for glycogen in a modified procedure described by Gomez- Lechon et al. (Gómez-Lechón et al. 1996). Briefly, 0.2 M sodium acetate, pH 4.8, was added to 30 µg parasite extract

and 50  $\mu$ l glucoamylase (10 U/ml) to make a reaction volume of 150  $\mu$ l. The mixture was incubated at 40°C for 2 h with shaking at 100 rpm, 40  $\mu$ l added to a new microplate with 10  $\mu$ l 0.25 M NaOH and the amount of glucose quantified using the colorimetric glucose assay kit. Extracts were made from triplicate sets of parasites (five pairs of worms) and assays were performed three times. Data are presented as the average of each triplicate biological and technical experiment  $\pm$  SEM.

#### **5.2.7.4 Immune responses in vaccinated mice**

Sera were collected from all mice in each group before cercarial challenge and at necropsy. Serum anti-*SmChE* IgG antibodies were measured by ELISA using standard methods.

#### **5.2.8. Statistical analyses**

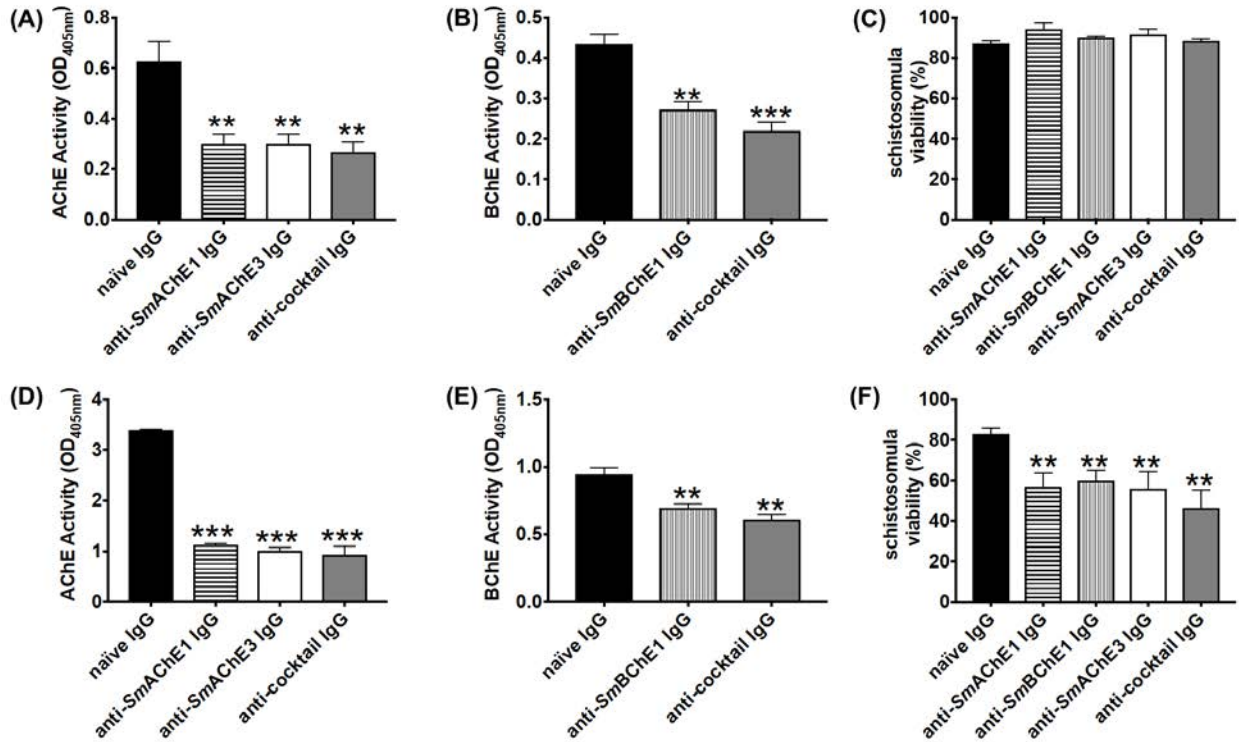
Statistical differences for all experiments in this chapter were calculated by the Student's *t* test using GraphPad Prism 7 software. Results are expressed as the mean  $\pm$  standard error of the mean (SEM).

## 5.3. Results

### 5.3.1. Anti-*SmChE* polyclonal antibodies block enzyme activity and decrease viability of larval

#### *S. mansoni* *in vitro*

To determine the ability of anti-*SmChE* specific polyclonal antibodies to inhibit ChE activity in *S. mansoni*, and the effect this had on parasite viability, I studied the effects of paralog-specific antibodies on at two different timepoints. Treating schistosomula with anti-*SmAChE1* IgG, anti-*SmAChE3* IgG, or a cocktail of all three anti-*SmChE* IgGs caused significant inhibition ( $P \leq 0.01$ ) of AChE activity by 56.2%, 57.1% and 59.74%, respectively, 2 h after treatment, in comparison with the naïve IgG control (Fig 5.1A). When schistosomula were incubated with anti-*SmBChE1* IgG or a cocktail of all three anti-*SmChE* IgGs for 2 h, BChE activity was inhibited by 37.4% ( $P \leq 0.01$ ) and 49.3% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ), respectively, compared to the control (Fig 1B). Schistosomula viability was not significantly affected at this timepoint (Fig 1C). Extending the treatment with anti-*SmAChE1* IgG, anti-*SmAChE3* IgG, or a cocktail of all three anti-*SmChE* IgGs for 14 h significantly decreased ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) AChE activity by 66.9%, 70.5% and 72.6%, respectively, compared to the control (Fig 5.1D). Similarly, when schistosomula were incubated with anti-*SmBChE1* IgG or a cocktail of all three anti-*SmChE* IgGs for 14 h, BChE activity decreased significantly ( $P \leq 0.01$ ) by 26.5% and 35.6%, respectively, compared to the control (Fig 5.1E). Schistosomula viability was significantly decreased ( $P \leq 0.01$ ) by all treatments at this timepoint, with the biggest decrease seen in the anti-*SmChE* cocktail IgG-treated group (Fig 5.1F).



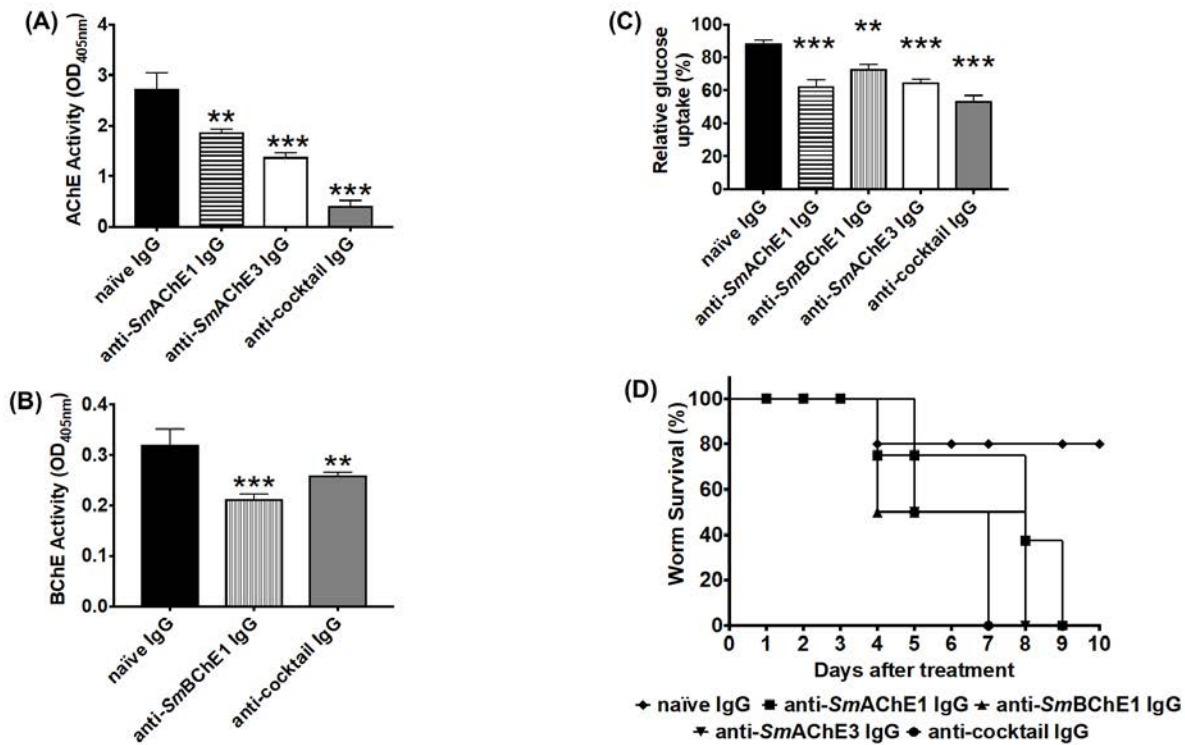
**Fig 5.1. Anti-SmChE antibodies inhibit ChE activity in schistosomula which leads to decreased parasite viability.** Newly transformed schistosomula (1000/treatment) were incubated in DMEM in the presence of anti-SmChE IgG and incubated at 37 °C in 5% CO<sub>2</sub>. Naïve IgG served as a negative control. **(A)** AChE activity 2 h after treatment, **(B)** BChE activity 2 h after treatment, **(C)** schistosomula viability 2 h after treatment, **(D)** AChE activity 14 h after treatment. Data represents the mean ± SEM of two biological and three technical replicates. Significance (relative to the naïve IgG control) determined by the student's *t* test \*\*  $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\*  $P \leq 0.001$ .

### 5.3.2. Effects of anti-SmChE antibodies on adult worms

The effects of anti-SmChE antibodies on *S. mansoni* adult worms was also tested *in vitro*. Freshly perfused worms cultured in the presence of anti-SmAChE1, anti-SmAChE3, or a cocktail of all



three anti-*SmChEs*, showed no significant inhibition of AChE or BChE (data not shown) activity at 2 h post-treatment, compared to controls. After 24 h treatment, however, all anti-*SmChE* IgG-treated groups showed significant inhibition of AChE and BChE activity with the anti-*SmChE* cocktail IgG-treated group displaying the greatest inhibition of AChE activity (Fig 5.2A and 5.2B). The rate of glucose uptake over 24 h was also measured at this timepoint and all antibody treatments significantly reduced glucose uptake in adult worms, compared with naïve IgG-treated controls, again with the anti-*SmChE* cocktail IgG-treated group displaying the greatest inhibition (Fig 5.2C). To determine if anti-*SmChE* antibodies can play a role in killing adult worms, the antibody experiment was repeated with 5 pairs of adult worms per treatment and worm viability post-treatment was assessed. Consistent with inhibition of AChE activity and glucose uptake, the cocktail of anti-*SmChE* antibodies were the most effective in killing (all worms dead at day 7 post-treatment), compared to controls (Fig 5.2D).

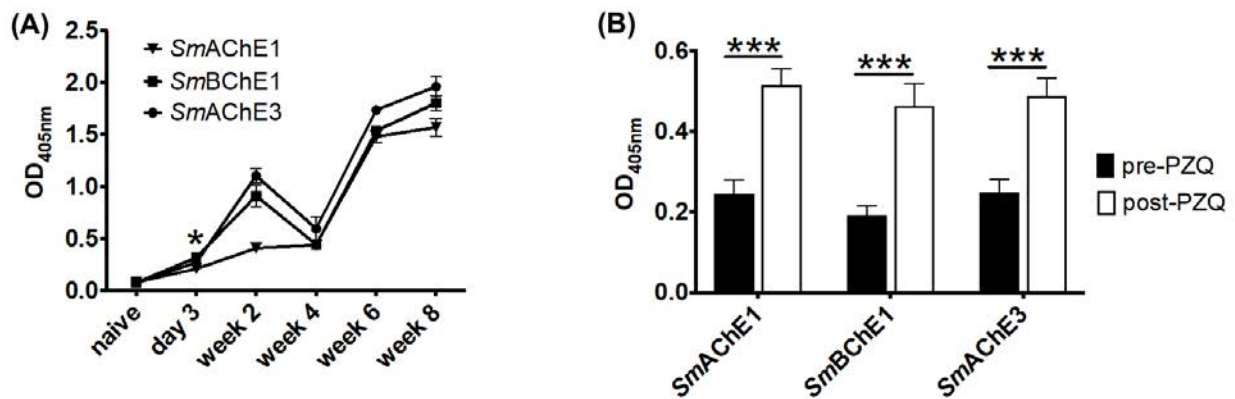


**Fig 5.2. Effects of anti-SmChE antibodies on adult *S. mansoni* worms.**

Five pairs of freshly perfused worms were incubated in the presence of anti-SmChE purified IgG in DMEM at 37 °C in 5% CO<sub>2</sub>. Naïve IgG served as a negative control. **(A)** AChE activity 24 h after treatment, **(B)** BChE activity 24 h after treatment, **(C)** glucose uptake over 24 h, one day after treatment **(D)** survivability up to 10 days after treatment. The results are the mean ± SEM of two biological and three technical replicates (A-C) or two biological replicates (D). Significance (relative to the naïve IgG control) determined by the student's *t* test \**P* ≤ 0.05, \*\* *P* ≤ 0.01, \*\*\* *P* ≤ 0.001.

### 5.3.3. Antibody responses to *SmChEs* during the course of infection and following PZQ treatment in mice

Antibody responses to all *SmChEs* were significantly higher in infected mice than before infection, even at just 3 days post-challenge ( $P \leq 0.05$ ), and increased as infection progressed (Fig 5.3A). In a separate experiment, all anti-*SmChE* IgG responses were shown to significantly increase ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) after PZQ treatment (Fig 5.3B).

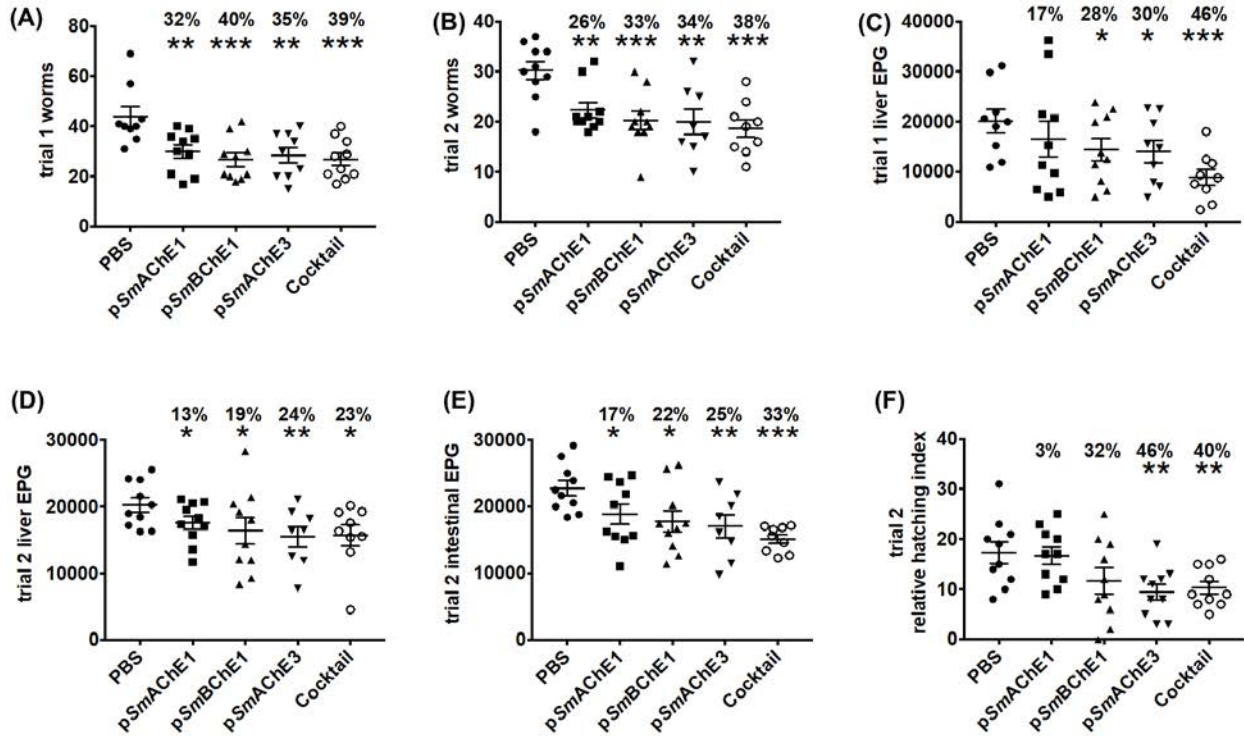


**Fig 5.3. Antibody responses to *SmChEs* during the course of infection and following PZQ treatment in mice.** Anti-*SmChE* IgG responses in mice (A) from 3 days to 8 weeks post-infection ( $n=5$ ) and (B) before (5 weeks post-infection) and 2 weeks after PZQ treatment. Data represents the mean of 2 technical replicates and significance determined by the student's *t* test  $*P \leq 0.05$ .

### 5.3.4. Vaccine efficacy of recombinant *SmChEs* in a mouse model of schistosomiasis

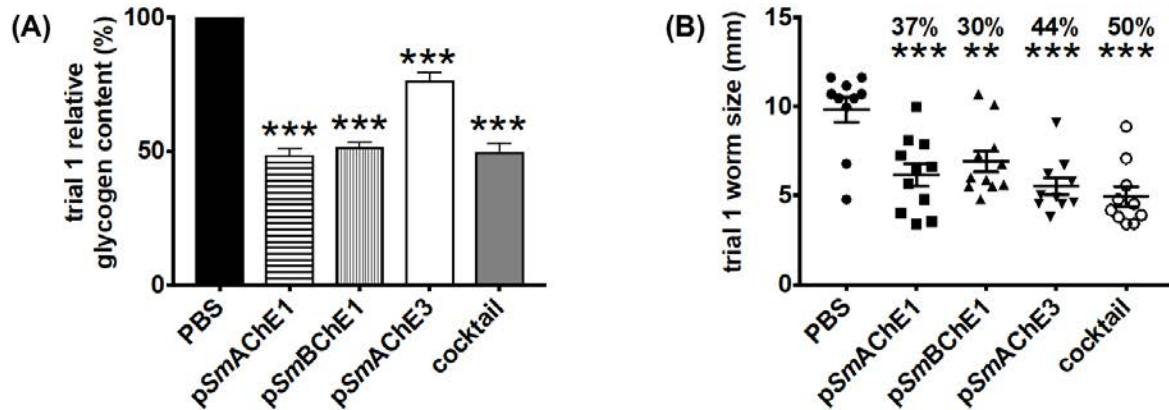
In both vaccine trials, all four groups of mice immunized with *SmChEs*, either in isolation or as a combination, showed a significant decrease in worm burden (28% - 38%), compared to controls, with the *SmChE* cocktail-vaccinated group displaying the highest reduction in trial 1

and 2 of 38% ( $P \leq 0.001$ ) (Fig 5.4A and 5.4B). Compared to controls, significant decreases in liver egg burdens (expressed as eggs per gram – EPG) were observed for all groups across both trials (13% - 46%), except for the *SmAChE1*-vaccinated group in trial 1. When averaged over both trials, liver egg burdens in the cocktail-vaccinated group showed the greatest reduction (Fig 5.4C and D). Intestinal egg burdens (expressed as EPG - only determined for trial 2) were significantly reduced for all vaccinated groups, compared to controls, with the greatest reduction seen in the group vaccinated with the *SmChE* cocktail (33%,  $P \leq 0.001$ ). (Fig 5.4E). Egg viability (only assessed for trial 2), as determined by egg hatching from liver homogenates, was significantly reduced in the groups vaccinated with the *SmChE* cocktail (40%,  $P \leq 0.01$ ) and *SmAChE3* (46%,  $P \leq 0.01$ ) (Fig 5.4F). While there was no significant reduction in glucose uptake for worms from any of the vaccinated groups, compared to controls (data not shown), the glycogen content of worms from all vaccinated groups in trial 1 was significantly lower (24% - 52%,  $P \leq 0.001$ ) than worms from the control group (Fig 5.5A). A significant reduction in worm length (30%-50%) was also observed between worms from all vaccinated groups compared to worms from the control group (Fig 5.5B). As with the parasitology burden data, worms from the cocktail-vaccinated group showed the greatest decrease in glycogen content and body length. Glucose uptake, glycogen content and worm size was not significantly different between control and vaccinated worms in trial 2 (data not shown).



**Fig 5.4. Vaccine efficacy of recombinant *SmChEs* in a mouse model of schistosomiasis.**

Graphs show parasitology burdens from vaccinated and control mice **(A)** trial 1 adult worms, **(B)** trial 2 adult worms, **(C)** trial 1 liver EPG, **(D)** trial 2 liver EPG, **(E)** trial 2 intestinal EPG. **(F)** Hatching viability of eggs obtained from the pooled livers of control and vaccinated mice from trial 2. Data are the average of ten replicate counts  $\pm$  SEM of hatched miracidia. Significance and percent reductions (if any) for all parameters are measured relative to the control group. Significance determined by the student's *t* test \* $P \leq 0.05$ , \*\* $P \leq 0.01$ , \*\*\* $P \leq 0.001$ .



**Fig 5.5. Effect of pSmChEs vaccination on glycogen storage in, and size of, *S. mansoni* adults.**

(A) Triton-X-100 extracts were made from 5 pairs of worms freshly perfused from each vaccinated or control group and the glycogen content in these extracts was measured. Plotted data are the average of triplicate biological and technical experiments  $\pm$  SEM. (B) Worm sizes (mm) were assessed by randomly selecting and measuring (ImageJ) at least 20 worms from each group. Significance and percent reductions (if any) for both parameters are measured relative to the control group. Differences for both experiments were measured by the student's *t* test  $*P \leq 0.05$ ,  $**P \leq 0.01$ ,  $***P \leq 0.001$ .

## 5.4. Discussion

Surface-exposed proteins, such as tegumental proteins, are effective targets for vaccine development in schistosomes (Mulvenna et al. 2010; Sotillo et al. 2015). In this regard, SmChEs are promising candidates as immunolocalization studies in *S. mansoni* has shown SmAChE1, SmBChE1 and SmAChE3 to be expressed in the tegument of adult worms and schistosomula

(chapter 3), and proteomic analysis of ES products has confirmed the presence of *SmAChE1*, *SmBChE1* (chapter 3), suggesting that these molecules are accessible to immune attack. Further, RNAi-mediated silencing of all 3 *SmChE* genes, both individually and in combination, significantly decrease schistosomula viability *in vitro* and parasite survival *in vivo* (Chapter 4), implying that these genes are essential for proper worm development and function. Moreover, recent protein array studies have demonstrated high levels of circulating antibodies to *SmBChE1* in individuals exhibiting drug-induced resistance and low pathology to schistosomiasis, implicating these antibodies in a protective anti-schistosomal response (Pearson et al. 2015; Driguez et al. 2016).

Given *SmChEs* are accessible to antibody attack, and are enzymatically functional (chapter 3), catalytic activity can be used to measure the effectiveness of antibody binding as the interaction between enzymes and their corresponding antibodies generally leads to a complete or partial reduction in their enzymatic activity (Cinader et al. 1971; Arnon 1973; Arnon 1975). The data presented here show that antibodies against recombinant *SmChEs* are capable of inhibiting surface (and, in the case of *SmAChE1* and *SmBChE1*, secreted) enzymatic activities in both schistosomula and adult worms, which is similar to previous studies that have used antibodies raised against parasite-derived AChE to inhibit AChE activity on intact *S. mansoni* (Espinoza et al. 1995), *Necator americanus* (Pritchard et al. 1991), *Dictyocaulus viviparus* (McKeand et al. 1994) and *Electrophorus electricus* (Williams 1969). The inhibitory effect of antibodies is likely to be due to steric hindrance, potentially blocking substrate access to the peripheral anionic sites or catalytic gorge of AChE. Indeed, previous studies on rabbit (Brimijoin et al. 1985), human

---

(Sorensen et al. 1987) and bovine (Wolfe 1989) AChE have documented the AChE-inhibitory ability of antibodies raised against epitopes other than AChE-active sites.

Consistent with the effects of RNAi-mediated *SmChE* gene silencing, antibody-mediated *SmChE* inhibition resulted in a significant decrease in parasite viability. I posit that this mode of enzyme inhibition was the cause of eventual parasite death as schistosomula were still viable, compared to controls, at 2 hours after antibody treatment, despite a significant decrease in ChE activity; it was not until after a much longer exposure (14 h) to anti-*SmChE* antibodies that parasite viability was significantly lower. It should be noted that, while more effective *in vitro* killing experiments have been performed (Arnon et al. 1987), these studies were conducted with the addition of guinea pig complement to facilitate complement-dependent killing and so may not truly represent the amount of parasite death due to enzyme inactivation appeared to have a similar effect on adult worms in that a significant reduction in ChE activity was evident in treated parasites before death started to occur. Glucose uptake in adult worms (not tested in schistosomula) was also significantly reduced by anti-*SmChE* antibody treatment. The cholinergic action of surface AChE has been implicated in mediation of the glucose scavenging mechanism in schistosomes (Camacho et al. 1995) and I have shown that AChE-inhibitory, anti-schistosomal drugs reduce glucose import in parasites (Sundaraneedi et al. 2017) so it is likely that antibody-mediated impairment of glucose uptake contributed to a decrease in parasite viability. As seen in our RNAi studies, simultaneous inhibition of multiple *SmChEs* by the treatment with a cocktail of *SmChE* antibodies resulted in the greatest reduction in parasite viability, both adult and



juvenile. It may be that there is some redundancy in the cholinergic functioning of these molecules (even BChEs, like *SmBChE1*, can perform a cholinergic role in situations of AChE deficiency (Boudinot et al. 2005) and so collective inhibition of the molecules is required to produce a functional deficit. Also, given the multiple proposed functions for parasite ChEs (Day et al. 1996; Arnon et al. 1999), it is possible is that the neutralization of multiple enzymatic targets more profoundly interrupts varied processes of parasite biology than just cholinergic transmission.

Given the relative cytotoxic potential of antibodies against all three *SmChEs* as opposed to anyone *SmChE*, I decided to test the efficacy of this antigen cocktail as a vaccine in a mouse model of schistosomiasis. The vaccine efficacy of each individual *SmChE* was also tested to investigate the relative anti-parasitic effects of anyone *SmChE* over the cocktail or one another.

Mice vaccinated with the cocktail of *SmChE* antigens displayed the highest level of protection against experimental schistosomiasis, showing the greatest reductions in every parameter tested. An additive protective effect was not readily apparent, however, as protection levels were not significantly different from groups vaccinated with single antigens. Of the groups vaccinated with individual *SmAChEs*, the *SmAChE3* vaccinated group engendered the highest levels of protection. Similar results were reported in a test of the vaccine efficacy of a recombinant AChE from *S. japonicum* (You et al. 2018). Further, vaccine trials using purified secretory AChE from the nematodes *Trichostrongylus colubriformis* and *Dictyocaulus viviparus* have resulted in

significant protection in animal models (Griffiths et al. 1994; McKeand et al. 1995).

Egg burdens did not concomitantly decrease with worm burdens, but there were significant reductions in egg viability in all but the *SmAChE1*-vaccinated group, an observation I have previously reported when testing the *in vivo* anti-schistosomal efficacy of AChE-inhibitory drugs (Sundaraneedi et al. 2017). Studies in rats and honey bees have observed abdominal spasms and involuntary muscle contractions when AChE inhibitors have been administered to these organisms (Jarvie et al. 2008; Williamson et al. 2013) so a possible explanation for this less than expected decrease in egg number but significant reduction in viability could be that ova are being prematurely released as a result of AChE inhibition affecting reproductive tract motility. It could also be that the significant stunting of worms recovered from vaccinated groups affected fecundity and egg maturity. Indeed, previous studies on insects demonstrated that suppression of AChE considerably reduced the weight and length of surviving organisms (Kumar et al. 2009; Hui et al. 2011; Ye et al. 2017) and severely affected the hatching ability of the eggs laid (Kumar et al. 2009; Xiao et al. 2015). These researches have suggested that dysregulated cell proliferation and apoptosis during larval growth may be reasons for such phenotypic effects attributed to the absence of AChE, although such a link in trematodes remains to be established. Finally, parasites recovered from vaccinated mice had significantly depleted glycogen stores. Reduced glycogen content and glucose uptake in worms treated with AChE-inhibitory drugs have been previously observed *in vitro* (Sundaraneedi et al. 2017) and be attributed to interference with the tegumental AChE-mediated glucose scavenging pathway (Camacho et al. 1995) through

the inhibition of this enzyme. It could be that the same effect is being orchestrated by antibody-mediated inhibition of AChE (which would be consistent with the results of *in vitro* antibody-based experiments and RNAi studies - chapter 4, forcing the parasite to rely on its glycogen stores, rather than the scavenging of exogenous glucose, for nutrition.

Even though immunization with *SmChEs* induced high titers, these antibody levels were not sustained during the course of infection, with titers at necropsy dropping between four- and ten-fold from pre-challenge levels. This would seem to indicate that the specific antibody response induced by immunization was not augmented by natural infection, a hypothesis corroborated by the generation of modest anti-*SmChE* titers during the course of parasite infection in a separate experiment. That being said, the *SmChEs* used in this study were still capable of inducing moderate levels of protection in the face of modest antibody titers. Treatment with PZQ has been shown to induce antibody-mediated resistance to schistosomiasis in humans through the exposure of parasite antigens to the immune system (and subsequent generation of an antibody response) as a result of tegument damage (Harder et al. 1987) and protein array studies by us have shown that antibodies to *SmBChE1* are significantly upregulated in resistant individuals (Pearson et al. 2015). The upregulation of *SmChE* immune responses following PZQ treatment has been verified in this study. Given that an effective anti-schistosomal vaccine strategy would ideally be linked with chemotherapy (Pearson et al. 2015), it is possible that the vaccine efficacy of antigens such as the ones described here could be increased by vaccination after PZQ treatment due to the augmentation of an already upregulated immune response.

## CHAPTER 6

---

### General discussion and future directions

---

Schistosomiasis affects over 200 million people in the developing tropics. There is no approved vaccine for the infection and current treatment and disease control relies on chemotherapy with a single drug, praziquantel (PZQ) (Trainor-Moss et al. 2016), which is a concern due to the inevitable development of drug resistance (Cioli 2000). There is a strong imperative, therefore, to identify novel vaccine and drug targets which can form the basis of anti-schistosomal intervention strategies. In this respect, we need to increase our understanding of the biology of this parasite to identify essential facets of schistosome physiology that could be disrupted through immuno- or chemotherapy.

The vital biological processes of schistosomes are solely regulated and controlled by the parasite's nervous system (Halton et al. 1996), emphasizing the importance of targeting its neuromusculature and associated proteins for therapeutic development. In the present work, I show that acetylcholinesterases (AChEs) - a class of neuronal and tegumental enzymes responsible for the regulation of neurotransmission through hydrolysis of the neurotransmitter acetylcholine (ACh) - can be inhibited by inorganic metal complexes, causing death of the parasite. I then provide a comprehensive molecular characterization of three cholinesterase enzymes from *Schistosoma mansoni* (SmChEs) and give evidence that they are vital for the normal functioning of the parasite through the use of RNAi- and vaccine-based approaches that target these molecules.

The work presented in chapter two of this thesis documents the use of polypyridylruthenium (II) (Ru) complexes in the successful treatment of schistosomiasis through the inhibition of parasite AChE. Various classes of synthetic Ru complexes, including the panel screened in this study, have been shown to possess antimicrobial properties (Gorle et al. 2016), but this current work is the first documentation of the anthelmintic activity of these compounds. The AChE activity in schistosome extracts was inhibited significantly (low micromolar concentration) by a range of panel members. Further studies on live *S. mansoni* parasites also revealed that the complexes displayed efficacy against eggs and juvenile worms *in vitro*. They were also active against adult worms, which became immobile and coiled upon treatment, possibly due to the paralyzing effects of AChE inhibition (Bueding et al. 1972; Hillman et al. 1975; Pax et al. 1981). Treated parasites showed significant decreases in surface and somatic AChE activity, implying the complexes exerted their effects, at least partially, through the inhibition of the activity of these enzymes. Worms treated with Ru complexes had a significantly reduced ability to uptake glucose, an observation likely explained by the inhibition of tegumental AChE, which is a mediator of exogenous glucose scavenging by the parasite (Camacho et al. 1995). Two of the compounds were tested for their efficacy in a mouse model of schistosomiasis and were shown to have a significant impact on egg viability and development. This effect may be due to compounds stimulating reproductive tract motility (De Giorgio et al. 2004; McNamara et al. 2008), resulting in the premature release of under-developed eggs, a hypothesis supported by AChE inhibitor studies in ticks (Perez-Gonzalez et al. 2014; Prado-Ochoa et al. 2014).

In addition to highlighting the potential of Ru compounds as effective drug leads for the treatment of schistosomiasis, the experiments in chapter two stimulated research efforts into determining the specific molecules responsible for ChE functioning in *S. mansoni* (chapter three). In contrast to previous studies, interrogation of the now comprehensively annotated *S. mansoni* genome, revealed the presence of three ChE-encoding genes: two acetylcholinesterases (AChE)s - *SmAChE1* (Smp\_154600) and *SmAChE3* (Smp\_136690) – and one butyrylcholinesterase (BChE) – *SmBChE1* (Smp\_125350). Functional expression of the three paralogs verified their ChE class based on hydrolysis of AcSCh or BcSCh. Antibodies to recombinant molecules localized the proteins to the tegument and neuromusculature of adults and schistosomula and developmental expression profiling differed among the molecules, suggestive of functions extending beyond traditional cholinergic signaling for each of them. *SmAChE1* and *SmBChE1* were also found in parasite ES products. Evidence was provided for the role of *SmBChE1* as a bio-scavenger of carboxylic esters, using the anti-schistosomal AChE inhibitor, DDVP, as an example. It was postulated that *SmBChE1* might protect parasite AChE against the effects of naturally occurring AChE inhibitors by performing this function, given the role of human BChE in the detoxification of similar molecules (Lockridge 2015).

RNA interference was used to further investigate the functions of *SmChEs* (chapter four). Silencing of *SmChEs*, either individually or in a combination of all three paralogs, reduced transcript and protein expression levels significantly. For *SmAChE1* and *SmAChE3*, knockdown resulted in decreased AChE activity in parasite extracts and suppressed uptake of glucose by live

schistosomula, reflective of the neuronal and non-neuronal cholinergic functions suggested from immunolocalization results. Silencing of *SmBChE1* did not suppress BChE activity or impair glucose uptake, implying a different function for this molecule. All *SmChEs* were regarded as essential for parasite development and function, however as *SmChE*-silenced schistosomula failed to survive both *in vitro* and *in vivo*. Further, simultaneous silencing of all three paralogs had a more profound impact on parasite survivability than each individual treatment, implying some degree of functional redundancy between the molecules but also highlighting the effectiveness in targeting numerous molecular functions in the development of a parasite intervention strategy

The tegumental localization (chapter three) and essentiality (chapter four) of *SmChEs* attested to the feasibility of targeting these molecules with antibodies to develop an effective vaccine against schistosomiasis, the objective of the experiments in chapter five of this thesis. Indeed, both adult worms and schistosomula treated *in vitro* with anti-*SmChE* IgG (either individually or in combination) showed significant decreases in ChE activity and glucose uptake ability, reflective of RNAi results. Further, when administered as vaccines, either individually or in combination, in a mouse model of schistosomiasis, recombinant *SmChEs* protected against parasite challenge as adult worm burdens were significantly reduced and surviving worms were stunted and nutritionally depleted. Egg loads were not as decreased as worm numbers but egg viability was affected by *SmChE* vaccination, reflective of results observed in the drug *in vivo* efficacy trials (chapter two).



In conclusion, the data generated in this thesis has resulted in a detailed characterization of a family of ChE molecules from *S. mansoni* and has highlighted the anti-schistosomal efficacy of a novel class of AChE-inhibitory Ru complexes. Further, it offers new approaches for targeting aspects of schistosome neurobiology as a method of controlling the debilitating disease caused by these parasites.

### **Future directions**

In chapter two of this thesis, I have described the anti-schistosomal activity of a family of Ru complexes and, while some members showed promising efficacy *in vivo*, the maximum tolerated dose was relatively low. The modular nature of Ru complexes makes it possible to synthesize these compounds to target specific enzymes and even regions within molecules, so future work will involve tailoring Ru complexes to increase their selectivity and potency. Further, given their potency against PZQ-refractory schistosomes, these complexes could be administered in combination with PZQ, overcoming the limitations of current monotherapy and augmenting existing schistosomiasis control initiatives.

In a first for schistosomiasis research, I have documented the presence of catalytically active *SmChEs* (*SmAChE1* and *SmBChE1*) in parasite ES products (chapter three). Secretory AChEs have extensively characterized in *N. brasiliensis* (Selkirk et al. 2005; Selkirk et al. 2005) and recent studies have suggested an immunomodulatory function for these molecules through the hydrolysis of host ACh (Vaux et al. 2016). It is tempting to speculate that secreted (and even

tegumental) *SmAChE1* may perform a similar function in schistosomes, given its accessibility to the host environment. Co-culture experiments with RNAi-silenced schistosomula and immune effector cells could be designed to explore this hypothesis.

The isolation of a BChE (*SmBChE1*) from schistosomes (chapter three) is a novel finding, and one with potential translational application, given its perceived role in the detoxification of AChE-inhibitory compounds. Human BChE is currently being developed as a treatment for cocaine addicts due to its ability to rapidly inactivate the drug and there is considerable research effort focused on producing structural mutants of BChE, from humans and other organisms, to increase the catalytic turnover (and, therefore, detoxification potential) of the enzyme (Lockridge 2015). *SmBChE1* could be studied for this, and similar, purposes and be added to the growing arsenal of helminth molecules being exploited for therapeutic use.

The *SmChEs* characterized in this study have been shown to provide modest protection against schistosomiasis when administered as vaccines (chapter five). I have documented the ability of anti-*SmChEs* to impact parasite viability *in vitro*, thus providing evidence for the role of humoral immunity in protection, so it may be possible that the generation of only modest antibody titers in vaccinated animals may be the reason for the protection levels observed, although the role. Future studies to maximize the vaccine potential of these molecules will include the use of full-length proteins as vaccine antigens (to potentially increase immunogenicity. The role of T-cell

mediated immunity in protection cannot be ignored so additional experiments will involve the use of different adjuvant formulations to stimulate a range of immune responses.

## References

Abdi, Y. A., Gustafsson, L. L. & Hellgren, U. (1995). Handbook of Drugs for Tropical Parasitic Infections. London, Taylor & Francis.

Adzhubei, A. A., M. J. Sternberg and A. A. Makarov (2013). "Polyproline-II helix in proteins: structure and function." J Mol Biol **425**(12): 2100-2132.

Ahmad, G., W. Zhang, W. Torben, A. Ahrorov, R. T. Damian, et al. (2011). "Preclinical prophylactic efficacy testing of Sm-p80-based vaccine in a nonhuman primate model of *Schistosoma mansoni* infection and immunoglobulin G and E responses to Sm-p80 in human serum samples from an area where schistosomiasis is endemic." J Infect Dis **204**(9): 1437-1449.

Albuquerque, E. X., E. F. R. Pereira, M. Alkondon and S. W. Rogers (2009). "Mammalian Nicotinic Acetylcholine Receptors: From Structure to Function." Physiol Rev **89**(1): 73-120.

Allon, N., L. Raveh, E. Gilat, E. Cohen, J. Grunwald, et al. (1998). "Prophylaxis against soman inhalation toxicity in guinea pigs by pretreatment alone with human serum butyrylcholinesterase." Toxicol Sci **43**(2): 121-128.

Alves, C. C., N. Araujo, V. C. dos Santos, F. B. Couto, N. R. Assis, et al. (2015). "Sm29, but not Sm22.6 retains its ability to induce a protective immune response in mice previously exposed to a *Schistosoma mansoni* infection." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **9**(2): e0003537.

Anderson, L., M. S. Amaral, F. Beckedorff, L. F. Silva, B. Dazzani, et al. (2016). "*Schistosoma mansoni* Egg, Adult Male and Female Comparative Gene Expression Analysis and Identification of Novel Genes by RNA-Seq." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **9**(12): e0004334.

Angelucci, F., A. A. Sayed, D. L. Williams, G. Boumis, M. Brunori, et al. (2009). "Inhibition of *Schistosoma mansoni* thioredoxin-glutathione reductase by auranofin: structural and kinetic aspects." J Biol Chem **284**(42): 28977-28985.

Arnon, R. (1973). CHAPTER 2 - Immunochemistry of Enzymes. The Antigens. M. Sela, Academic Press: 87-159.

Arnon, R. (1975). "Enzyme inhibition by antibodies." Acta endocrinologica Supplementum (Copenhagen) **194**: 133-153.

Arnon, R., B. Espinoza-Ortega and R. Tarrab-Hazdai (1987). "Acetylcholinesterase of *Schistosoma mansoni*: an antigen of functional implications." Mem Inst Oswaldo Cruz **82**: 163-170.

Arnon, R., I. Silman and R. Tarrab-Hazdai (1999). "Acetylcholinesterase of *Schistosoma mansoni* - Functional correlates - Contributed in honor of Professor Hans Neurath's 90th birthday." Protein Sci **8**(12): 2553-2561.

Ashton, P. D., R. Harrop, B. Shah and R. A. Wilson (2001). "The schistosome egg: development and secretions." Parasitology **122**(Pt 3): 329-338.

Baguñà, J. and R. Ballester (1978). "The nervous system in planarians: Peripheral and gastrodermal plexuses, pharynx innervation, and the relationship between central nervous system structure and the acoelomate organization." J Morphol **155**(2): 237-252.

Barker, L. R., E. Bueding and A. R. Timms (1966). "The possible role of acetylcholine in *Schistosoma mansoni*." Br J Pharmacol Chemother **26**(3): 656-665.

Basch, P. F. (1981). "Cultivation of *Schistosoma mansoni* *In vitro*. I. Establishment of cultures from cercariae and development until pairing." J Parasitol **67**(2): 179-185.

- Basch, P. F. (1990). "Why do schistosomes have separate sexes?" Parasitol Today **6**(5): 160-163.
- Beck, L., T. C. Favre, O. S. Pieri, L. C. Zani, G. G. Domas, et al. (2001). "Replacing oxamniquine by praziquantel against *Schistosoma mansoni* infection in a rural community from the sugar-cane zone of Northeast Brazil: an epidemiological follow-up." Mem Inst Oswaldo Cruz **96 Suppl**: 165-167.
- Bentley, G. N., A. K. Jones and A. Agnew (2003). "Mapping and sequencing of acetylcholinesterase genes from the platyhelminth blood fluke *Schistosoma*." Gene **314**: 103-112.
- Bentley, G. N., A. K. Jones and A. Agnew (2005). "Expression and comparative functional characterisation of recombinant acetyl cholinesterase from three species of *Schistosoma*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **141**(1): 119-123.
- Bentley, G. N., A. K. Jones, W. G. Oliveros Parra and A. Agnew (2004). "ShAR1alpha and ShAR1beta: novel putative nicotinic acetylcholine receptor subunits from the platyhelminth blood fluke *Schistosoma*." Gene **329**: 27-38.
- Bergquist, R., J. Utzinger and J. Keiser (2017). "Controlling schistosomiasis with praziquantel: How much longer without a viable alternative?" Infect Dis Poverty **6**(1): 74.
- Berriman, M., B. J. Haas, P. T. LoVerde, R. A. Wilson, G. P. Dillon, et al. (2009). "The genome of the blood fluke *Schistosoma mansoni*." Nature **460**.
- Bhardwaj, R., G. Krautz-Peterson and P. J. Skelly (2011). Using RNA Interference in *Schistosoma mansoni*. Therapeutic Oligonucleotides: Methods and Protocols. J. Goodchild. Totowa, NJ, Humana Press: 223-239.

Black, C. L., P. N. Mwinzi, E. M. Muok, B. Abudho, C. M. Fitzsimmons, et al. (2010). "Influence of exposure history on the immunology and development of resistance to human *Schistosomiasis mansoni*." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **4**(3): e637.

Blackburn, C. C. and M. E. Selkirk (1992). "Inactivation of platelet-activating factor by a putative acetylhydrolase from the gastrointestinal nematode parasite *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis*." Immunology **75**(1): 41-46.

Bonilla, M., A. Denicola, S. V. Novoselov, A. A. Turanov, A. Protasio, et al. (2008). "Platyhelminth mitochondrial and cytosolic redox homeostasis is controlled by a single thioredoxin glutathione reductase and dependent on selenium and glutathione." J Biol Chem **283**(26): 17898-17907.

Botros, S., H. Sayed, N. Amer, M. El-Ghannam, J. L. Bennett, et al. (2005). "Current status of sensitivity to praziquantel in a focus of potential drug resistance in Egypt." Int J Parasitol **35**(7): 787-791.

Botti, S. A., C. E. Felder, J. L. Sussman and I. Silman (1998). "Electrotactins: a class of adhesion proteins with conserved electrostatic and structural motifs." Protein Eng **11**(6): 415-420.

Boudinot, E., L. Taysse, S. Daulon, A. Chatonnet, J. Champagnat, et al. (2005). "Effects of acetylcholinesterase and butyrylcholinesterase inhibition on breathing in mice adapted or not to reduced acetylcholinesterase." Pharmacol Biochem Behav **80**(1): 53-61.

Boulanger, D., A. Warter, B. Sellin, V. Lindner, R. J. Pierce, et al. (1999). "Vaccine potential of a recombinant glutathione S-transferase cloned from *Schistosoma haematobium* in primates experimentally infected with an homologous challenge." Vaccine **17**(4): 319-326.

- Boulanger, D., A. Warter, F. Trottein, F. Mauny, P. Bremond, et al. (1995). "Vaccination of patas monkeys experimentally infected with *Schistosoma haematobium* using a recombinant glutathione S-transferase cloned from *Schistosoma mansoni*." Parasite Immunol **17**(7): 361-369.
- Bourne, Y., Z. Radic, H. C. Kolb, K. B. Sharpless, P. Taylor, et al. (2005). "Structural insights into conformational flexibility at the peripheral site and within the active center gorge of AChE." Chem-Biol Interact **157-158**: 159-165.
- Braschi, S., R. S. Curwen, P. D. Ashton, S. Verjovski-Almeida and A. Wilson (2006). "The tegument surface membranes of the human blood parasite *Schistosoma mansoni*: a proteomic analysis after differential extraction." Proteomics **6**(5): 1471-1482.
- Bregman, H., P. J. Carroll and E. Meggers (2006). "Rapid access to unexplored chemical space by ligand scanning around a ruthenium center: discovery of potent and selective protein kinase inhibitors." J Am Chem Soc **128**(3): 877-884.
- Brimijoin, S., K. P. Mintz and F. G. Prendergast (1985). "An inhibitory monoclonal antibody to rabbit brain acetylcholinesterase. Studies on interaction with the enzyme." Mol Pharmacol **28**(6): 539-545.
- Brito, C. F., G. C. Oliveira, S. C. Oliveira, M. Street, S. Riengrojpitak, et al. (2002). "Sm14 gene expression in different stages of the *Schistosoma mansoni* life cycle and immunolocalization of the Sm14 protein within the adult worm." Braz J Med Biol Res **35**(3): 377-381.
- Bruckner, D. A. and M. Vage (1974). "The nervous system of larval *Schistosoma mansoni* as revealed by acetylcholinesterase staining." J Parasitol **60**(3): 437-446.
-



- Bueding, E. (1952). "Acetylcholinesterase activity of *Schistosoma mansoni*." Br J Pharmacol Chemother **7**(4): 563-566.
- Bueding, E., C. L. Liu and S. H. Rogers (1972). "Inhibition by metrifonate and dichlorvos of cholinesterases in schistosomes." Br J Pharmacol **46**(3): 480-487.
- Bueding, E., E. L. Schiller and J. G. Bourgeois (1967). "Some physiological, biochemical, and morphologic effects of tris (p-aminophenyl) carbonium salts (TAC) on *Schistosoma mansoni*." Am J Trop Med Hyg **16**(4): 500-515.
- Camacho, M. and A. Agnew (1995). "*Schistosoma*: Rate of glucose import is altered by acetylcholine interaction with tegumental acetylcholine receptors and acetylcholinesterase." Exp Parasitol **81**(4): 584-591.
- Camacho, M., S. Alford, A. Jones and A. Agnew (1995). "Nicotinic acetylcholine receptors on the surface of the blood fluke *Schistosoma*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **71**(1): 127-134.
- Camacho, M., R. Tarrab-Hazdai, B. Espinoza, R. Arnon and A. Agnew (1994). "The amount of acetylcholinesterase on the parasite surface reflects the differential sensitivity of schistosome species to metrifonate." Parasitology **108 ( Pt 2)**: 153-160.
- Cardoso, F. C., G. C. Macedo, E. Gava, G. T. Kitten, V. L. Mati, et al. (2008). "*Schistosoma mansoni* tegument protein Sm29 is able to induce a Th1-type of immune response and protection against parasite infection." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **2**(10): e308.
- Cesari, I. M., A. J. Simpson and W. H. Evans (1981). "Properties of a series of tegumental membrane-bound phosphohydrolase activities of *Schistosoma mansoni*." Biochem J **198**(3): 467-473.
-

- 
- Cinader, B., T. Suzuki and H. Pelichová (1971). "Enzyme-Activation by Antibody." The Journal of Immunology **106**(5): 1381.
- Cioli, D. (2000). "Praziquantel: is there real resistance and are there alternatives?" Curr Opin Infect Dis **13**(6): 659-663.
- Cioli, D., L. Pica-Mattocchia and S. Archer (1989). "Resistance of schistosomes to hycanthon and oxamniquine." Mem Inst Oswaldo Cruz **84 Suppl 1**: 38-45.
- Clegg, J. A., S. R. Smithers and R. J. Terry (1971). "Acquisition of human antigens by *Schistosoma mansoni* during cultivation *in vitro*." Nature **232**(5313): 653-654.
- Cohen, S. M. (2007). "New approaches for medicinal applications of bioinorganic chemistry." Curr Opin Chem Biol **11**(2): 115-120.
- Colley, D. G., A. L. Bustinduy, W. E. Secor and C. H. King (2014). "Human schistosomiasis." The Lancet **383**(9936): 2253-2264.
- Collins, J. J., R. S. King, A. Cogswell, D. L. Williams and P. A. Newmark (2011). "An Atlas for *Schistosoma mansoni* Organs and Life-Cycle Stages Using Cell Type-Specific Markers and Confocal Microscopy." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **5**(3): e1009.
- Čolović, M. B., D. Z. Krstić, T. D. Lazarević-Pašti, A. M. Bondžić and V. M. Vasić (2013). "Acetylcholinesterase Inhibitors: Pharmacology and Toxicology." Curr Neuropharmacol **11**(3): 315-335.
- Correa-Oliveira, R., I. R. Caldas and G. Gazzinelli (2000). "Natural versus drug-induced resistance in *Schistosoma mansoni* infection." Parasitol Today **16**(9): 397-399.
-

- Crellen, T., M. Walker, P. H. Lamberton, N. B. Kabatereine, E. M. Tukahebwa, et al. (2016). "Reduced Efficacy of Praziquantel Against *Schistosoma mansoni* Is Associated With Multiple Rounds of Mass Drug Administration." Clin Infect Dis **63**(9): 1151-1159.
- Cupit, P. M., M. L. Steinauer, B. W. Tonnessen, L. E. Agola, J. M. Kinuthia, et al. (2011). "Polymorphism associated with the *Schistosoma mansoni* tetraspanin-2 gene." Int J Parasitol **41**(12): 1249-1252.
- Da'dara, A. A. and P. J. Skelly (2015). "Gene suppression in schistosomes using RNAi." Methods Mol Biol **1201**: 143-164.
- Da'dara, A. A. and P. J. Skelly (2015). Gene Suppression in Schistosomes Using RNAi. Parasite Genomics Protocols. C. Peacock. New York, NY, Springer New York: 143-164.
- Dalton, J. P., S. R. Day, A. C. Drew and P. J. Brindley (1997). "A method for the isolation of schistosome eggs and miracidia free of contaminating host tissues." Parasitology **115 ( Pt 1)**: 29-32.
- Darboux, I., Y. Barthalay, M. Piovant and R. Hipeau-Jacquotte (1996). "The structure-function relationships in *Drosophila* neurotactin show that cholinesterasic domains may have adhesive properties." EMBO J **15**(18): 4835-4843.
- Davis, A. and D. R. Bailey (1969). "Metrifonate in urinary schistosomiasis." Bull WHO **41**(2): 209-224.
- Day, T. A., G. Z. Chen, C. Miller, M. Tian, J. L. Bennett, et al. (1996). "Cholinergic inhibition of muscle fibres isolated from *Schistosoma mansoni* (Trematoda:Digenea)." Parasitology **113 ( Pt 1)**: 55-61.
-

De Giorgio, R., V. Stanghellini, G. Barbara, S. Guerrini, A. Lioce, et al. (2004). "Prokinetics in the treatment of acute intestinal pseudo-obstruction." *IDrugs* **7**(2): 160-165.

De Vriese, C., F. Gregoire, R. Lema-Kisoka, M. Waelbroeck, P. Robberecht, et al. (2004). "Ghrelin degradation by serum and tissue homogenates: identification of the cleavage sites." *Endocrinology* **145**(11): 4997-5005.

Dean, D. A., K. D. Murrell, S. T. Xu and B. L. Mangold (1983). "Immunization of mice with ultraviolet-irradiated *Schistosoma mansoni* cercariae: a re-evaluation." *Am J Trop Med Hyg* **32**(4): 790-793.

Debreczeni, J. E., A. N. Bullock, G. E. Atilla, D. S. Williams, H. Bregman, et al. (2006). "Ruthenium half-sandwich complexes bound to protein kinase Pim-1." *Angewandte Chemie (International ed in English)* **45**(10): 1580-1585.

Driguez, P., D. L. Doolan, D. M. Molina, A. Loukas, A. Trieu, et al. (2015). Protein Microarrays for Parasite Antigen Discovery. *Parasite Genomics Protocols*. C. Peacock. New York, NY, Springer New York: 221-233.

Driguez, P., Y. Li, S. Gaze, M. S. Pearson, R. Nakajima, et al. (2016). "Antibody signatures reflect different disease pathologies in patients with schistosomiasis due to *Schistosoma japonicum*." *J Infect Dis* **213**(1): 122-130.

Driguez, P., H. E. G. McWilliam, S. Gaze, D. Piedrafita, M. S. Pearson, et al. (2016). "Specific humoral response of hosts with variable schistosomiasis susceptibility." *Immunol Cell Biol* **94**(1): 52-65.

- Dvir, H., I. Silman, M. Harel, T. L. Rosenberry and J. L. Sussman (2010). "Acetylcholinesterase: from 3D structure to function." Chem Biol Interact **187**(1-3): 10-22.
- Dwyer, F. P., E. C. Gyarfás, W. P. Rogers and J. H. Koch (1952). "Biological activity of complex ions." Nature **170**(4318): 190-191.
- Egesa, M., K. F. Hoffmann, C. H. Hokke, M. Yazdanbakhsh and S. Cose (2017). "Rethinking Schistosomiasis Vaccine Development: Synthetic Vesicles." Trends Parasitol **33**(12): 918-921.
- Ellman, G. L., K. D. Courtney, V. Andres and R. M. Featherstone (1961). "A new and rapid colorimetric determination of acetylcholinesterase activity." Biochem Pharmacol **7**(2): 88-95.
- Espinoza, B., M. Parizade, E. Ortega, R. Tarrab-Hazdai, D. Zilberg, et al. (1995). "Monoclonal antibodies against acetylcholinesterase of *Schistosoma mansoni*: production and characterization." Hybridoma **14**(6): 577-586.
- Espinoza, B., I. Silman, R. Arnon and R. Tarrab-Hazdai (1991). "Phosphatidylinositol-Specific Phospholipase-C Induces Biosynthesis of Acetylcholinesterase via Diacylglycerol in *Schistosoma mansoni*." Eur J Biochem **195**(3): 863-870.
- Espinoza, B., R. Tarrab-Hazdai, S. Himmeloch and R. Arnon (1991). "Acetylcholinesterase from *Schistosoma mansoni*: immunological characterization." Immunol Lett **28**(2): 167-174.
- Felder, C. E., S. A. Botti, S. Lifson, I. Silman and J. L. Sussman (1997). "External and internal electrostatic potentials of cholinesterase models." J Mol Graphics Model **15**(5): 318-327, 335-317.

- 
- Feldmeier, H., E. Doehring, A. A. Daffala, A. H. Omer and M. Dietrich (1982). "Efficacy of metrifonate in urinary schistosomiasis: comparison of reduction of *Schistosoma haematobium* and *Schistosoma mansoni* eggs." Am J Trop Med Hyg **31**(6): 1188-1194.
- Fenwick, A. and P. Jourdan (2016 ). "Schistosomiasis elimination by 2020 or 2030?" Int J Parasitol.
- Fripp, P. J. (1967). "Histochemical localization of esterase activity in schistosomes." Exp Parasitol **21**(3): 380-390.
- Furlong, S. T. (1991). "Unique roles for lipids in *Schistosoma mansoni*." Parasitol Today **7**(2): 59-62.
- Gale, R. P. and J. Zigelboim (1974). "Modulation of polymorphonuclear leukocyte-mediated antibody-dependent cellular cytotoxicity." J Immunol **113**(6): 1793-1800.
- Gaze, S., P. Driguez, M. S. Pearson, T. Mendes, D. L. Doolan, et al. (2014). "An immunomics approach to schistosome antigen discovery: antibody signatures of naturally resistant and chronically infected individuals from endemic areas." PLoS Path **10**(3): e1004033.
- Gill, M. R. and J. A. Thomas (2012). "Ruthenium(II) polypyridyl complexes and DNA--from structural probes to cellular imaging and therapeutics." Chem Soc Rev **41**(8): 3179-3192.
- Girard, E., V. Bernard, J. Minic, A. Chatonnet, E. Krejci, et al. (2007). "Butyrylcholinesterase and the control of synaptic responses in acetylcholinesterase knockout mice." Life Sci **80**(24): 2380-2385.
- Gobert, G. N., M. Chai and D. P. McManus (2007). "Biology of the schistosome lung-stage schistosomulum." Parasitology **134**(Pt 4): 453-460.
-

- Gobert, G. N., D. J. Stenzel, D. P. McManus and M. K. Jones (2003). "The ultrastructural architecture of the adult *Schistosoma japonicum* tegument." Int J Parasitol **33**(14): 1561-1575.
- Goldlust, A., R. Arnon, I. Silman and R. Tarrabhadai (1986). "Acetylcholinesterase of *Schistosoma-mansoni* - Purification and Characterization." J Neurosci Res **15**(4): 569-581.
- Gómez-Lechón, M. J., X. Ponsoda and J. V. Castell (1996). "A Microassay for Measuring Glycogen in 96-Well-Cultured Cells." Anal Biochem **236**(2): 296-301.
- Gong, L., Y. Chen, Z. Hu and M. Hu (2013). "Testing Insecticidal Activity of Novel Chemically Synthesized siRNA against *Plutella xylostella* under Laboratory and Field Conditions." PLOS One **8**(5): e62990.
- Gorle, A. K., M. Feterl, J. M. Warner, L. Wallace, F. R. Keene, et al. (2014). "Tri- and tetra-nuclear polypyridyl ruthenium(ii) complexes as antimicrobial agents." Dalton Trans **43**(44): 16713-16725.
- Gorle, A. K., X. Li, S. Primrose, F. Li, M. Feterl, et al. (2016). "Oligonuclear polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes: selectivity between bacteria and eukaryotic cells." J Antimicrob Chemother **71**(6): 1547-1555.
- Gray, D. J., A. G. Ross, Y. S. Li and D. P. McManus (2011). "Diagnosis and management of schistosomiasis." BMJ (Clinical research ed) **342**: d2651.
- Greenspan, R. J., J. A. Finn, Jr. and J. C. Hall (1980). "Acetylcholinesterase mutants in *Drosophila* and their effects on the structure and function of the central nervous system." J Comp Neurol **189**(4): 741-774.

- 
- Griffiths, G. and D. I. Pritchard (1994). "Vaccination against gastrointestinal nematodes of sheep using purified secretory acetylcholinesterase from *Trichostrongylus colubriformis*– an initial pilot study." Parasite Immunol **16**(9): 507-510.
- Gryseels, B., K. Polman, J. Clerinx and L. Kestens (2006). "Human schistosomiasis." The Lancet **368**(9541): 1106-1118.
- Guo, Z. and P. J. Sadler (1999). "Metals in Medicine." Angewandte Chemie International Edition **38**(11): 1512-1531.
- Halton, D. W. and M. K. S. Gustafsson (1996). "Functional morphology of the platyhelminth nervous system." Parasitology **113**(SupplementS1): S47-S72.
- Halton, D. W., Maule, A.G. and Shaw, C. (1997) . In: (eds) . CRC Press, B, pp. . (1997). Trematode neurobiology. Advances in Trematode Biology. B. a. G. Fried, T.K. oca Raton, New York, CRC Press: 345– 382.
- Hams, E., G. Aviello and P. G. Fallon (2013). "The Schistosoma Granuloma: Friend or Foe?" Front Immunol **4**: 89.
- Han, H., J. Peng, G. N. Gobert, Y. Hong, M. Zhang, et al. (2013). "Apoptosis phenomenon in the schistosomulum and adult worm life cycle stages of *Schistosoma japonicum*." Parasitol Int **62**(2): 100-108.
- Harder, A., P. Andrews and H. Thomas (1987). "Praziquantel: mode of action." Biochem Soc Trans **15**(1): 68.
- He, G., Y. Sun and F. Li (2012). "RNA Interference of two acetylcholinesterase genes in *Plutella Xylostella* reveals their different functions." Arch Insect Biochem Physiol **79**(2): 75-86.
-



Hewitson, J. P., A. C. Ivens, Y. Harcus, K. J. Filbey, H. J. McSorley, et al. (2013). "Secretion of protective antigens by tissue-stage nematode larvae revealed by proteomic analysis and vaccination-induced sterile immunity." PLoS Path **9**(8): e1003492.

Hillman, G. R. and A. W. Senft (1975). "Anticholinergic properties of the antischistosomal drug Hycanthone." Am J Trop Med Hyg **24**(5): 827-834.

Hinz, V., S. Grewig and B. H. Schmidt (1996). "Metrifonate and dichlorvos: effects of a single oral administration on cholinesterase activity in rat brain and blood." Neurochem Res **21**(3): 339-345.

Hodgson, A. J. and I. W. Chubb (1983). "A method for the detection and quantitation of secretory acetylcholinesterase." Neurochem Pathol **1**(3): 211.

Hotez, P. J., M. Alvarado, M. G. Basáñez, I. Bolliger, R. Bourne, et al. (2014). "The Global Burden of Disease study 2010: interpretation and implications for the neglected tropical diseases." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **8**.

Hotez, P. J., J. M. Bethony, D. J. Diemert, M. Pearson and A. Loukas (2010). "Developing vaccines to combat hookworm infection and intestinal schistosomiasis." Nat Rev Microbiol.

Hotez, P. J., D. H. Molyneux, A. Fenwick, J. Kumaresan, S. E. Sachs, et al. (2007). "Control of neglected tropical diseases." NEJM **357**(10): 1018-1027.

Hu, Z., E. C. Pym, K. Babu, A. B. Vashlishan Murray and J. M. Kaplan (2011). "A neuropeptide-mediated stretch response links muscle contraction to changes in neurotransmitter release." Neuron **71**(1): 92-102.

Huang, Y.-J., Y. Huang, H. Baldassarre, B. Wang, A. Lazaris, et al. (2007). "Recombinant human butyrylcholinesterase from milk of transgenic animals to protect against organophosphate poisoning." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **104**(34): 13603-13608.

Hughes, A. L. (1993). "Rates of amino acid evolution in the 26- and 28-kDa glutathione S-transferases of *Schistosoma*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **58**(1): 43-52.

Hui, X.-M., L.-W. Yang, G.-L. He, Q.-P. Yang, Z.-J. Han, et al. (2011). "RNA interference of *ace1* and *ace2* in *Chilo suppressalis* reveals their different contributions to motor ability and larval growth." Insect Mol Biol **20**(4): 507-518.

Hussein, A. S., M. Harel and M. E. Selkirk (2002). "A distinct family of acetylcholinesterases is secreted by *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **123**(2): 125-134.

Hussein, A. S., K. Kichenin and M. E. Selkirk (2002). "Suppression of secreted acetylcholinesterase expression in *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* by RNA interference." Mol Biochem Parasitol **122**(1): 91-94.

Ignarro, L. J. and C. Colombo (1973). "Enzyme release from polymorphonuclear leukocyte lysosomes: regulation by autonomic drugs and cyclic nucleotides." Science (New York, NY) **180**(4091): 1181-1183.

Ignarro, L. J. and W. J. George (1974). "Hormonal control of lysosomal enzyme release from human neutrophils: elevation of cyclic nucleotide levels by autonomic neurohormones." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **71**(5): 2027-2031.

---

- Ittiprasert, W., V. H. Mann, S. E. Karinshak, A. Coghlan, G. Rinaldi, et al. (2018). "Programmed genome editing of the omega-1 ribonuclease of the blood fluke, *Schistosoma mansoni*." bioRxiv: 358424.
- Jann, M. W. (1998). "Preclinical pharmacology of metrifonate." Pharmacotherapy **18**(2 Pt 2): 55-67; discussion 79-82.
- Jarvie, E. M., S. Celtek and G. J. Sanger (2008). "Potentiation by cholinesterase inhibitors of cholinergic activity in rat isolated stomach and colon." Pharmacol Res **58**(5-6): 297-301.
- Johnson, C. D., J. B. Rand, R. K. Herman, B. D. Stern and R. L. Russell (1988). "The acetylcholinesterase genes of *C. elegans*: Identification of a third gene (*ace-3*) and mosaic mapping of a synthetic lethal phenotype." Neuron **1**(2): 165-173.
- Jones, A. K., G. N. Bentley, W. G. Oliveros Parra and A. Agnew (2002). "Molecular characterization of an acetylcholinesterase implicated in the regulation of glucose scavenging by the parasite *Schistosoma*." FASEB J **16**(3): 441-443.
- Kalbe, M., B. Haberl, J. Hertel and W. Haas (2004). "Heredity of specific host-finding behaviour in *Schistosoma mansoni* miracidia." Parasitology **128**(Pt 6): 635-643.
- Kariuki, T. M., I. O. Farah, D. S. Yole, J. M. Mwenda, G. J. Van Dam, et al. (2004). "Parameters of the attenuated schistosome vaccine evaluated in the olive baboon." Infect Immun **72**(9): 5526-5529.
- Karmakar, S., W. Zhang, G. Ahmad, W. Torben, M. U. Alam, et al. (2014). "Cross-species protection: *Schistosoma mansoni* Sm-p80 vaccine confers protection against *Schistosoma haematobium* in hamsters and baboons." Vaccine **32**(11): 1296-1303.
-

- Keene, F. R., J. A. Smith and J. G. Collins (2009). "Metal complexes as structure-selective binding agents for nucleic acids." Coord Chem Rev **253**(15–16): 2021-2035.
- Kimber, M. J. and C. C. Fleming (2005). "Neuromuscular function in plant parasitic nematodes: a target for novel control strategies?" Parasitology **131**(S1): S129-S142.
- King, C. H. and M. Dangerfield-Cha (2008). "The unacknowledged impact of chronic schistosomiasis." Chronic illness **4**(1): 65-79.
- Kishk, A., F. Hijaz, H. A. I. Anber, T. K. AbdEl-Raof, A.-H. D. El-Sherbeni, et al. (2017). "RNA interference of acetylcholinesterase in the Asian citrus psyllid, *Diaphorina citri*, increases its susceptibility to carbamate and organophosphate insecticides." Pestic Biochem Physiol **143**: 81-89.
- Kramer, C. V., F. Zhang, D. Sinclair and P. L. Olliaro (2014). "Drugs for treating urinary schistosomiasis." Cochrane Database Syst Rev **8**: Cd000053.
- Krautz-Peterson, G., M. Simoes, Z. Faghiri, D. Ndegwa, G. Oliveira, et al. (2010). "Suppressing glucose transporter gene expression in schistosomes impairs parasite feeding and decreases survival in the mammalian host." PLoS Path **6**(6): e1000932.
- Krautz-Peterson, G. and P. J. Skelly (2008). "*Schistosoma mansoni*: the dicer gene and its expression." Exp Parasitol **118**(1): 122-128.
- Kremsner, P. G., P. Enyong, F. W. Krijger, N. De Jonge, G. M. Zotter, et al. (1994). "Circulating anodic and cathodic antigen in serum and urine from *Schistosoma haematobium*-infected Cameroonian children receiving praziquantel: a longitudinal study." Clin Infect Dis **18**(3): 408-413.

- 
- Kumar, M., G. P. Gupta and M. V. Rajam (2009). "Silencing of acetylcholinesterase gene of *Helicoverpa armigera* by siRNA affects larval growth and its life cycle." J Insect Physiol **55**(3): 273-278.
- Kumar, S., G. Stecher and K. Tamura (2016). "MEGA7: Molecular Evolutionary Genetics Analysis Version 7.0 for Bigger Datasets." Mol Biol Evol **33**(7): 1870-1874.
- Kuntz, A. N., E. Davioud-Charvet, A. A. Sayed, L. L. Califf, J. Dessolin, et al. (2007). "Thioredoxin glutathione reductase from *Schistosoma mansoni*: an essential parasite enzyme and a key drug target." PLoS Med **4**(6): e206.
- Kwong, T. C. (2002). "Organophosphate pesticides: biochemistry and clinical toxicology." Ther Drug Monit **24**(1): 144-149.
- Lang, G. J., K. Y. Zhu and C. X. Zhang (2012). "Can acetylcholinesterase serve as a target for developing more selective insecticides?" Curr Drug Targets **13**(4): 495-501.
- Lawrence, C. E. and D. I. Pritchard (1993). "Differential secretion of acetylcholinesterase and proteases during the development of *Heligmosomoides polygyrus*." Int J Parasitol **23**(3): 309-314.
- Lee, D. L. (1970). "The fine structure of the excretory system in adult *Nippostrongylus brasiliensis* (Nematoda) and a suggested function for the 'excretory glands'." Tissue Cell **2**(2): 225-231.
- Lee, D. L. (1996). "Why do some nematode parasites of alimentary tract secrete acetylcholinesterase?" Int J Parasitol **26**(5): 499-508.
- Lee, E. F., O. B. Clarke, M. Evangelista, Z. Feng, T. P. Speed, et al. (2011). "Discovery and molecular characterization of a Bcl-2-regulated cell death pathway in schistosomes." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **108**(17): 6999-7003.
-

Levi-Schaffer, F., R. Tarrab-Hazdai, H. Meshulam and R. Arnon (1984). "Effect of phosphonium salts and phosphoranes on the acetylcholinesterase activity and on the viability of *Schistosoma mansoni* parasites." Int J Immunopharmacol **6**(6): 619-627.

Levi-Schaffer, F., R. Tarrab-Hazdai, M. D. Schryer, R. Arnon and M. Smolarsky (1984). "Isolation and partial characterization of the tegumental outer membrane of schistosomula of *Schistosoma mansoni*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **13**(3): 283-300.

Lewis, F. A., M. A. Stirewalt, C. P. Souza and G. Gazzinelli (1986). "Large-scale laboratory maintenance of *Schistosoma mansoni*, with observations on three schistosome/snail host combinations." J Parasitol **72**(6): 813-829.

Li, B., J. A. Stribley, A. Ticu, W. Xie, L. M. Schopfer, et al. (2000). "Abundant tissue butyrylcholinesterase and its possible function in the acetylcholinesterase knockout mouse." J Neurochem **75**(3): 1320-1331.

Li, F., J. G. Collins and F. R. Keene (2015). "Ruthenium complexes as antimicrobial agents." Chem Soc Rev **44**(8): 2529-2542.

Li, F., A. K. Gorle, M. Ranson, K. L. Vine, R. Kinobe, et al. (2017). "Probing the pharmacokinetics of cucurbit[7, 8 and 10]uril: and a dinuclear ruthenium antimicrobial complex encapsulated in cucurbit[10]uril." Org Biomol Chem **15**(19): 4172-4179.

Li, F., Y. Mulyana, M. Feterl, J. M. Warner, J. G. Collins, et al. (2011). "The antimicrobial activity of inert oligonuclear polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes against pathogenic bacteria, including MRSA." Dalton Trans **40**(18): 5032-5038.

- Liao, G., X. Chen, J. Wu, C. Qian, Y. Wang, et al. (2015). "Ruthenium(II) polypyridyl complexes as dual inhibitors of telomerase and topoisomerase." Dalton Trans **44**(34): 15145-15156.
- Lockridge, O. (2015). "Review of human butyrylcholinesterase structure, function, genetic variants, history of use in the clinic, and potential therapeutic uses." Pharmacol Ther **148**: 34-46.
- Long, T., R. J. Neitz, R. Beasley, C. Kalyanaraman, B. M. Suzuki, et al. (2016). "Structure-Bioactivity Relationship for Benzimidazole Thiophene Inhibitors of Polo-Like Kinase 1 (PLK1), a Potential Drug Target in *Schistosoma mansoni*." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **10**(1): e0004356.
- Lopez-Arrieta, J. M. and L. Schneider (2006). "Metrifonate for Alzheimer's disease." Cochrane Database Syst Rev(2): Cd003155.
- Lorenz, W., A. Henglein and G. Schrader (1955). "The New Insecticide O,O-Dimethyl 2,2,2-Trichloro-1-hydroxyethylphosphonate." J Am Chem Soc **77**(9): 2554-2556.
- Loukas, A., M. Tran and M. S. Pearson (2007). "Schistosome membrane proteins as vaccines." Int J Parasitol **37**(3-4): 257-263.
- Lu, Y., Y. Park, X. Gao, X. Zhang, J. Yao, et al. (2012). "Cholinergic and non-cholinergic functions of two acetylcholinesterase genes revealed by gene-silencing in *Tribolium castaneum*." Sci Rep **2**: 288.
- Luo, Z., L. Yu, F. Yang, Z. Zhao, B. Yu, et al. (2014). "Ruthenium polypyridyl complexes as inducer of ROS-mediated apoptosis in cancer cells by targeting thioredoxin reductase." Metallomics **6**(8): 1480-1490.

- 
- MacDonald, K., M. J. Kimber, T. A. Day and P. Ribeiro (2015). "A constitutively active G protein-coupled acetylcholine receptor regulates motility of larval *Schistosoma mansoni*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **202**(1): 29-37.
- Mack, A. and A. Robitzki (2000). "The key role of butyrylcholinesterase during neurogenesis and neural disorders: an antisense-5'butyrylcholinesterase-DNA study." Prog Neurobiol **60**(6): 607-628.
- Mackintosh, C. (2004). "Dynamic interactions between 14-3-3 proteins and phosphoproteins regulate diverse cellular processes." Biochem J **381**(Pt 2): 329-342.
- Mair, G. R., A. G. Maule, T. A. Day and D. W. Halton (2000). "A confocal microscopical study of the musculature of adult *Schistosoma mansoni*." Parasitology **121 ( Pt 2)**: 163-170.
- Mair, G. R., M. J. Niciu, M. T. Stewart, G. Brennan, H. Omar, et al. (2004). "A functionally atypical amidating enzyme from the human parasite *Schistosoma mansoni*." FASEB J **18**(1): 114-121.
- Malik, H. J., A. Raza, I. Amin, J. A. Scheffler, B. E. Scheffler, et al. (2016). "RNAi-mediated mortality of the whitefly through transgenic expression of double-stranded RNA homologous to acetylcholinesterase and ecdysone receptor in tobacco plants." Sci Rep **6**: 38469.
- Martinez-Gonzalez, J. J., A. Guevara-Flores, G. Alvarez, J. L. Rendon-Gomez and I. P. Del Arenal (2010). "In vitro killing action of auranofin on *Taenia crassiceps* metacestode (cysticerci) and inactivation of thioredoxin-glutathione reductase (TGR)." Parasitol Res **107**(1): 227-231.
- Mason, A. J., A. Marquette and B. Bechinger (2007). "Zwitterionic phospholipids and sterols modulate antimicrobial peptide-induced membrane destabilization." Biophys J **93**(12): 4289-4299.
-



- Massoulie, J. (2002). "The origin of the molecular diversity and functional anchoring of cholinesterases." Neuro-Signals **11**(3): 130-143.
- Massoulie, J., L. Pezzementi, S. Bon, E. Krejci and F. M. Vallette (1993). "Molecular and cellular biology of cholinesterases." Prog Neurobiol **41**(1): 31-91.
- McKeand, J. B., D. P. Knox, J. L. Duncan and M. W. Kennedy (1994). "The immunogenicity of the acetylcholinesterases of the cattle lungworm *Dictyocaulus viviparus*." Int J Parasitol **24**(4): 501-510.
- McKeand, J. B., D. P. Knox, J. L. Duncan and M. W. Kennedy (1995). "Immunisation of guinea pigs against *Dictyocaulus viviparus* using adult ES products enriched for acetylcholinesterases." Int J Parasitol **25**(7): 829-837.
- McManus, D. P. and A. Loukas (2008). "Current status of vaccines for schistosomiasis." Clin Microbiol Rev **21**(1): 225-242.
- McNamara, R. and M. J. Mihalakis (2008). "Acute colonic pseudo-obstruction: rapid correction with neostigmine in the emergency department." J Emerg Med **35**(2): 167-170.
- McVeigh, P., M. J. Kimber, E. Novozhilova and T. A. Day (2005). "Neuropeptide signalling systems in flatworms." Parasitology **131**(S1): S41-S55.
- Mduluza, T., P. Ndhlovu, T. Madziwa, N. Midzi, R. Zinyama, et al. (2001). "The impact of repeated treatment with praziquantel of schistosomiasis in children under six years of age living in an endemic area for *Schistosoma haematobium* infection." Mem Inst Oswaldo Cruz **96**: 157-164.
- Meggers, E. (2009). "Targeting proteins with metal complexes." Chem Commun(9): 1001-1010.

- 
- Mehlhorn, H., B. Becker, P. Andrews, H. Thomas and J. K. Frenkel (1981). "In vivo and in vitro experiments on the effects of praziquantel on *Schistosoma mansoni*. A light and electron microscopic study." Arzneimittel-Forschung **31**(3a): 544-554.
- Merrifield, M., P. J. Hotez, C. M. Beaumier, P. Gillespie, U. Strych, et al. (2016). "Advancing a vaccine to prevent human schistosomiasis." Vaccine.
- Mesulam, M. M., A. Guillozet, P. Shaw, A. Levey, E. G. Duysen, et al. (2002). "Acetylcholinesterase knockouts establish central cholinergic pathways and can use butyrylcholinesterase to hydrolyze acetylcholine." Neuroscience **110**(4): 627-639.
- Mo, A. X., J. M. Agosti, J. L. Watson, B. F. Hall and L. Gordon (2014). "Schistosomiasis elimination strategies and potential role of a vaccine in achieving global health goals." Am J Trop Med Hyg **90**(1): 54-60.
- Molehin, A. J., J. U. Rojo, S. Z. Siddiqui, S. A. Gray, D. Carter, et al. (2016). "Development of a schistosomiasis vaccine." Expert Rev Vaccines **15**(5): 619-627.
- Moser, D., M. Tendler, G. Griffiths and M. Q. Klinkert (1991). "A 14-kDa *Schistosoma mansoni* polypeptide is homologous to a gene family of fatty acid binding proteins." J Biol Chem **266**(13): 8447-8454.
- Mulcahy, S. P., S. Li, R. Korn, X. Xie and E. Meggers (2008). "Solid-phase synthesis of tris-heteroleptic ruthenium(II) complexes and application to acetylcholinesterase inhibition." Inorg Chem **47**(12): 5030-5032.
- Mulvenna, J., L. Moertel, M. K. Jones, S. Nawaratna, E. M. Lovas, et al. (2010). "Exposed proteins of the *Schistosoma japonicum* tegument." Int J Parasitol.
-

Mutapi, F., G. Winborn, N. Midzi, M. Taylor, T. Mduluza, et al. (2007). "Cytokine responses to *Schistosoma haematobium* in a Zimbabwean population: contrasting profiles for IFN-gamma, IL-4, IL-5 and IL-10 with age." BMC Infect Dis **7**: 139.

Navarro, M., C. Gabbiani, L. Messori and D. Gambino (2010). "Metal-based drugs for malaria, trypanosomiasis and leishmaniasis: recent achievements and perspectives." Drug Discov Today **15**(23-24): 1070-1078.

Ndegwa, D., G. Krautz-Peterson and P. J. Skelly (2007). "Protocols for gene silencing in schistosomes." Exp Parasitol **117**(3): 284-291.

Nicholas J, Megha Arora, Ryan M Barber, Zulfiqar A Bhutta, Jonathan Brown, et al. (2016). "Global, regional, and national disability-adjusted life-years (DALYs) for 315 diseases and injuries and healthy life expectancy (HALE), 1990–2015: a systematic analysis for the Global Burden of Disease study 2015. ." The Lancet (10053): 1603–1658.

Nishimura, K., Y. Kitamura, T. Taniguchi and K. Agata (2010). "Analysis of motor function modulated by cholinergic neurons in planarian *Dugesia japonica*." Neuroscience **168**(1): 18-30.

Olveda, D. U., Y. Li, R. M. Olveda, A. K. Lam, T. N. P. Chau, et al. (2013). "Bilharzia: Pathology, Diagnosis, Management and Control." Trop med surg **1**(4): 135.

Organization, W. H. (1993). The Control of Schistosomiasis. Second Report of the WHO Expert Committee. W. H. Organization. Geneva, WHO.

Orhan, I. E. (2013). "Nature: a substantial source of auspicious substances with acetylcholinesterase inhibitory action." Curr Neuropharmacol **11**(4): 379-387.

Pandrala, M., F. Li, M. Feterl, Y. Mulyana, J. M. Warner, et al. (2013). "Chlorido-containing ruthenium(ii) and iridium(iii) complexes as antimicrobial agents." Dalton Trans **42**(13): 4686-4694.

Pandrala, M., M. K. Sundaraneedi, A. J. Ammit, C. E. Woodward, L. Wallace, et al. (2015). "Differential Anticancer Activities of the Geometric Isomers of Dinuclear Iridium(III) Complexes." Eur J Inorg Chem **2015**(34): 5694-5701.

Paraoanu, L. E. and P. G. Layer (2008). "Acetylcholinesterase in cell adhesion, neurite growth and network formation." FEBS J **275**(4): 618-624.

Park, S. E., N. D. Kim and Y. H. Yoo (2004). "Acetylcholinesterase plays a pivotal role in apoptosome formation." Cancer Res **64**(8): 2652-2655.

Parker-Manuel, S. J., A. C. Ivens, G. P. Dillon and R. A. Wilson (2011). "Gene Expression Patterns in Larval *Schistosoma mansoni* Associated with Infection of the Mammalian Host." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **5**(8): e1274.

Patocka, N. and P. Ribeiro (2013). "The functional role of a serotonin transporter in *Schistosoma mansoni* elucidated through immunolocalization and RNA interference (RNAi)." Mol Biochem Parasitol **187**(1): 32-42.

Patocka, N., N. Sharma, M. Rashid and P. Ribeiro (2014). "Serotonin signaling in *Schistosoma mansoni*: a serotonin-activated G protein-coupled receptor controls parasite movement." PLoS Path **10**(1): e1003878.

Pax, R. A., T. A. Day, C. L. Miller and J. L. Bennett (1996). "Neuromuscular physiology and pharmacology of parasitic flatworms." Parasitology **113 Suppl**: S83-96.

---

Pax, R. A., C. Siefker, T. Hickox and J. L. Bennett (1981). "*Schistosoma mansoni*: Neurotransmitters, longitudinal musculature and effects of electrical stimulation." Exp Parasitol **52**(3): 346-355.

Pearce, E. J. and A. S. MacDonald (2002). "The immunobiology of schistosomiasis." Nat Rev Immunol **2**(7): 499-511.

Pearson, M. S., L. Becker, P. Driguez, N. D. Young, S. Gaze, et al. (2015). "Of monkeys and men: immunomic profiling of sera from humans and non-human primates resistant to schistosomiasis reveals novel potential vaccine candidates." Front Immunol **6**: 213.

Pedrique, B., N. Strub-Wourgaft, C. Some, P. Oliario, P. Trouiller, et al. (2013). "The drug and vaccine landscape for neglected diseases (2000–11): a systematic assessment." Lancet Glob Health **1**.

Pellegrino, J., C. A. Oliveira, J. Faria and A. S. Cunha (1962). "New approach to the screening of drugs in experimental schistosomiasis mansoni in mice." Am J Trop Med Hyg **11**: 201-215.

Perez-Gonzalez, I. E., M. G. Prado-Ochoa, M. A. Munoz-Guzman, V. H. Vazquez-Valadez, A. M. Velazquez-Sanchez, et al. (2014). "Effect of new ethyl and methyl carbamates on *Rhipicephalus microplus* larvae and adult ticks resistant to conventional ixodicides." Vet Parasitol **199**(3-4): 235-241.

Pezzementi, L., E. Krejci, A. Chatonnet, M. E. Selkirk and J. B. Matthews (2012). "A tetrameric acetylcholinesterase from the parasitic nematode *Dictyocaulus viviparus* associates with the vertebrate tail proteins PRiMA and ColQ." Mol Biochem Parasitol **181**(1): 40-48.

- 
- Porchet, E., A. McNair, A. Caron, J. P. Kusnierz, K. Zemzoumi, et al. (1994). "Tissue expression of the *Schistosoma mansoni* 28 kDa glutathione S-transferase." Parasitology **109** ( Pt 5): 565-572.
- Prado-Ochoa, M. G., P. Ramirez-Noguera, R. Diaz-Torres, G. I. Garrido-Farina, V. H. Vazquez-Valadez, et al. (2014). "The action of two ethyl carbamates on acetylcholinesterase and reproductive organs of *Rhipicephalus microplus*." Vet Parasitol **199**(3-4): 215-224.
- Pritchard, D. I. (1993). "Why do some parasitic nematodes secrete acetylcholinesterase (AChE)?" Int J Parasitol **23**(5): 549-550.
- Pritchard, D. I., K. V. Leggett, M. T. Rogan, P. G. McKean and A. Brown (1991). "*Necator americanus* secretory acetylcholinesterase and its purification from excretory-secretory products by affinity chromatography." Parasite Immunol **13**(2): 187-199.
- Ramalho-Pinto, F. J., G. Gazzinelli, R. E. Howells, T. A. Mota-Santos, E. A. Figueiredo, et al. (1974). "*Schistosoma mansoni*: defined system for stepwise transformation of cercaria to schistosomule *in vitro*." Exp Parasitol **36**(3): 360-372.
- Ramos, C. R., R. C. Figueredo, T. A. Pertinhez, M. M. Vilar, A. L. do Nascimento, et al. (2003). "Gene structure and M20T polymorphism of the *Schistosoma mansoni* Sm14 fatty acid-binding protein. Molecular, function, and immunoprotection analysis." J Biol Chem **278**(15): 12745-12751.
- Rathaur, S., B. D. Robertson, M. E. Selkirk and R. M. Maizels (1987). "Secretory acetylcholinesterases from *Brugia malayi* adult and microfilarial parasites." Mol Biochem Parasitol **26**(3): 257-265.
- Reich, M. R. and A. Fenwick (2001). "*Schistosoma haematobium*." NEJM **344**(15): 1170.
-

- Reuter, M. and M. Gustafsson (1996). "Neuronal signal substances in asexual multiplication and development in flatworms." Cell Mol Neurobiol **16**(5): 591-616.
- Ribeiro, P., F. El-Shehabi and N. Patocka (2005). "Classical transmitters and their receptors in flatworms." Parasitology **131 Suppl**: S19-40.
- Ribeiro, P. and T. Geary (2010). "Neuronal signaling in schistosomes: Current status and prospects for post-genomics. ." Can J Zool/Rev Can Zool **88** 1-22.
- Ribeiro, P., V. Gupta and N. El-Sakkary (2012). "Biogenic amines and the control of neuromuscular signaling in schistosomes." Invertebr Neurosci **12**(1): 13-28.
- Ribeiro, P. and N. Patocka (2013). "Neurotransmitter transporters in schistosomes: Structure, function and prospects for drug discovery." Parasitol Int **62**(6): 629-638.
- Rinaldi, G., A. Loukas, P. J. Brindley, J. T. Irelan and M. J. Smout (2015). "Viability of developmental stages of *Schistosoma mansoni* quantified with xCELLigence worm real-time motility assay (xWORM)." Int J Parasitol Drugs Drug Resist **5**(3): 141-148.
- Riveau, G., O. P. Poulain-Godefroy, L. Dupre, F. Remoue, N. Mielcarek, et al. (1998). "Glutathione S-transferases of 28kDa as major vaccine candidates against schistosomiasis." Mem Inst Oswaldo Cruz **93 Suppl 1**: 87-94.
- Rofatto, H. K., C. A. Tararam, W. C. Borges, R. A. Wilson, L. C. Leite, et al. (2009). "Characterization of phosphodiesterase-5 as a surface protein in the tegument of *Schistosoma mansoni*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **166**(1): 32-41.

- Roquis, D., J. M. J. Lepesant, E. Villafan, J. Boissier, C. Vieira, et al. (2014). "Exposure to Hycanthone alters chromatin structure around specific gene functions and specific repeats in *Schistosoma mansoni*." Front Genet **5**: 207.
- Rosi, D., G. Peruzzotti, E. W. Dennis, D. A. Berberian, H. Freele, et al. (1965). "A new active metabolite of "Miracil D"." Nature **208**(5014): 1005-1006.
- Ross, A. G., A. C. Sleight, Y. Li, G. M. Davis, G. M. Williams, et al. (2001). "Schistosomiasis in the People's Republic of China: prospects and challenges for the 21st century." Clin Microbiol Rev **14**(2): 270-295.
- Ross, A. G. P., P. B. Bartley, A. C. Sleight, G. R. Olds, Y. Li, et al. (2002). "Schistosomiasis." New Engl J Med **346**(16): 1212-1220.
- Rumjanek, E. (1987). Biochemistry and physiology. The biology of schistosomes from genes to latrines. D. S. Rollinson, A.J.G. London, Academic Press: 163-183.
- Sanchez-Delgado, R. A., M. Navarro, H. Perez and J. A. Urbina (1996). "Toward a novel metal-based chemotherapy against tropical diseases. 2. Synthesis and antimalarial activity *in vitro* and *in vivo* of new ruthenium- and rhodium-chloroquine complexes." J Med Chem **39**(5): 1095-1099.
- Sandor, M., J. V. Weinstock and T. A. Wynn (2003). "Granulomas in schistosome and mycobacterial infections: a model of local immune responses." Trends Immunol **24**(1): 44-52.
- Sangster, N. C., J. Song and J. Demeler (2005). "Resistance as a tool for discovering and understanding targets in parasite neuromusculature." Parasitology **131**(S1): S179-S190.
- Santos, S. C. R., I. Vala, C. Miguel, J. T. Barata, P. Garção, et al. (2007). "Expression and subcellular localization of a novel nuclear acetylcholinesterase protein." J Biol Chem **282**(35): 25597-25603.
-



- Saxena, A., W. Sun, C. Luo, T. M. Myers, I. Koplovitz, et al. (2006). "Bioscavenger for protection from toxicity of organophosphorus compounds." J Mol Neurosci **30**(1-2): 145-148.
- Schmittgen, T. D. and K. J. Livak (2008). "Analyzing real-time PCR data by the comparative C(T) method." Nat Protoc **3**(6): 1101-1108.
- Scholl, F. G. and P. Scheiffele (2003). "Making connections: cholinesterase-domain proteins in the CNS." Trends Neurosci **26**(11): 618-624.
- Schwabe, C. W., M. Koussa and A. N. Acra (1961). "Host-parasite relationships in echinococcosis—IV. Acetylcholinesterase and permeability regulation in the hydatid cyst wall." Comp Biochem Physiol **2**(3): 161-172.
- Selkirk, M. E., O. Lazari, A. S. Hussein and J. B. Matthews (2005). "Nematode acetylcholinesterases are encoded by multiple genes and perform non-overlapping functions." Chem-Biol Interact **157**: 263-268.
- Selkirk, M. E., O. Lazari and J. B. Matthews (2005). "Functional genomics of nematode acetylcholinesterases." Parasitology **131** Suppl: S3-18.
- Seto, E. Y., B. K. Wong, D. Lu and B. Zhong (2011). "Human schistosomiasis resistance to praziquantel in China: should we be worried?" Am J Trop Med Hyg **85**(1): 74-82.
- Siddiqui, A. A., Y. Zhou, R. B. Podesta, S. R. Karcz, C. E. Tognon, et al. (1993). "Characterization of Ca(2+)-dependent neutral protease (calpain) from human blood flukes, *Schistosoma mansoni*." Biochim Biophys Acta **1181**(1): 37-44.
- Silhavy, T. J., D. Kahne and S. Walker (2010). "The bacterial cell envelope." Cold Spring Harbor perspectives in biology **2**(5): a000414.
-

- 
- Silman I, S. J. (2000). Structural studies on cholinesterases. . cholinesterases and cholinesterase. G. E. London Mortin Dunitz: 9 – 25.
- Silman, I. and J. L. Sussman (2005). "Acetylcholinesterase: 'classical' and 'non-classical' functions and pharmacology." Curr Opin Pharmacol **5**(3): 293-302.
- Skelly, P. J., A. A. Da'dara, X. H. Li, W. Castro-Borges and R. A. Wilson (2014). "Schistosome feeding and regurgitation." PLoS Path **10**(8): e1004246.
- Skelly, P. J. and C. B. Shoemaker (1996). "Rapid appearance and asymmetric distribution of glucose transporter SGTP4 at the apical surface of intramammalian-stage *Schistosoma mansoni*." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **93**(8): 3642-3646.
- Smith, H., M. Doenhoff, C. Aitken, W. Bailey, M. Ji, et al. (2012). "Comparison of *Schistosoma mansoni* soluble cercarial antigens and soluble egg antigens for serodiagnosing schistosome infections." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **6**(9): e1815.
- Smout, M. J., J. Sotillo, T. Laha, A. Papatpremsiri, G. Rinaldi, et al. (2015). "Carcinogenic Parasite Secretes Growth Factor That Accelerates Wound Healing and Potentially Promotes Neoplasia." PLoS Path **11**(10): e1005209.
- Smyth, D., D. P. McManus, M. J. Smout, T. Laha, W. Zhang, et al. (2003). "Isolation of cDNAs encoding secreted and transmembrane proteins from *Schistosoma mansoni* by a signal sequence trap method." Infect Immun **71**(5): 2548-2554.
- Sorensen, K., U. Brodbeck, A. G. Rasmussen and B. Norgaard-Pedersen (1987). "An inhibitory monoclonal antibody to human acetylcholinesterases." Biochimica et biophysica acta **912**(1): 56-62.
-

- 
- Soreq, H. and S. Seidman (2001). "Acetylcholinesterase--new roles for an old actor." Nat Rev Neurosci **2**(4): 294-302.
- Sotillo, J., M. Pearson, L. Becker, J. Mulvenna and A. Loukas (2015). "A quantitative proteomic analysis of the tegumental proteins from *Schistosoma mansoni* schistosomula reveals novel potential therapeutic targets." Int J Parasitol **45**(8): 505-516.
- Sundaraneedi, M., R. M. Eichenberger, R. Al-Hallaf, D. Yang, J. Sotillo, et al. (2018). "Polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes exert *in vitro* and *in vivo* nematocidal activity and show significant inhibition of parasite acetylcholinesterases." Int J Parasitol Drugs Drug Resist **8**(1): 1-7.
- Sundaraneedi, M. K., B. A. Tedla, R. M. Eichenberger, L. Becker, D. Pickering, et al. (2017). "Polypyridylruthenium(II) complexes exert anti-schistosome activity and inhibit parasite acetylcholinesterases." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **11**(12): e0006134.
- Tarrab-Hazdai, R., B. Espinoza, N. J. Bolton, A. Agnew and R. Arnon (1991). "Comparison of acetylcholinesterase present in three species of schistosome." J Basic Clin Physiol Pharmacol **2**(3): A50-A50.
- Tarrab-Hazdai, R., F. Levi-Schaffer, M. Smolarsky and R. Arnon (1984). "Acetylcholinesterase of *Schistosoma mansoni*: antigenic cross-reactivity with *Electrophorus electricus* and its functional implications." Eur J Immunol **14**(3): 205-209.
- Tchuem Tchuenté, L.-A., S. C. Momo, J. R. Stothard and D. Rollinson (2013). "Efficacy of praziquantel and reinfection patterns in single and mixed infection foci for intestinal and urogenital schistosomiasis in Cameroon." Acta Trop **128**(2): 275-283.
-

- Tebeje, B. M., M. Harvie, H. You, A. Loukas and D. P. McManus (2016). "Schistosomiasis vaccines: where do we stand?" Parasites & Vectors **9**.
- Tendler, M., C. A. Brito, M. M. Vilar, N. Serra-Freire, C. M. Diogo, et al. (1996). "A *Schistosoma mansoni* fatty acid-binding protein, Sm14, is the potential basis of a dual-purpose anti-helminth vaccine." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **93**(1): 269-273.
- Thapa, S., M. Lv and H. Xu (2017). "Acetylcholinesterase: A Primary Target for Drugs and Insecticides." Mini-Rev Med Chem.
- Torben, W., G. Ahmad, W. Zhang, S. Nash, L. Le, et al. (2012). "Role of antibody dependent cell mediated cytotoxicity (ADCC) in Sm-p80-mediated protection against *Schistosoma mansoni*." Vaccine **30**(48): 6753-6758.
- Trainor-Moss, S. and F. Mutapi (2016). "Schistosomiasis therapeutics: whats in the pipeline?" Expert Rev Clin Pharmacol **9**(2): 157-160.
- Tran, M. H., T. C. Freitas, L. Cooper, S. Gaze, M. L. Gatton, et al. (2010). "Suppression of mRNAs encoding tegument tetraspanins from *Schistosoma mansoni* results in impaired tegument turnover." PLoS Path.
- Tran, M. H., M. S. Pearson, J. M. Bethony, D. J. Smyth, M. K. Jones, et al. (2006). "Tetraspanins on the surface of *Schistosoma mansoni* are protective antigens against schistosomiasis." Nat Med **12**(7): 835-840.
- Trottein, F., C. Godin, R. J. Pierce, B. Sellin, M. G. Taylor, et al. (1992). "Inter-species variation of schistosome 28-kDa glutathione S-transferases." Mol Biochem Parasitol **54**(1): 63-72.

- Tucker, M. S., L. B. Karunaratne, F. A. Lewis, T. C. Frietas and Y.-S. Liang (2013). Schistosomiasis. Curr Protoc Immunol. R. Coico, John Wiley and Sons, Inc.: 19.11.11-19.11.57.
- Utzinger, J., S. L. Becker, L. van Lieshout, G. J. van Dam and S. Knopp (2015). "New diagnostic tools in schistosomiasis." Clin Microbiol Infect **21**(6): 529-542.
- Utzinger, J., G. Raso, S. Brooker, D. De Savigny, M. Tanner, et al. (2009). "Schistosomiasis and neglected tropical diseases: towards integrated and sustainable control and a word of caution." Parasitology **136**(13): 1859-1874.
- Vale, N., M. J. Gouveia, G. Rinaldi, P. J. Brindley, F. Gartner, et al. (2017). "Praziquantel for Schistosomiasis: Single-Drug Metabolism Revisited, Mode of Action, and Resistance." Antimicrob Agents Chemother **61**(5).
- Valentim, C. L., D. Cioli, F. D. Chevalier, X. Cao, A. B. Taylor, et al. (2013). "Genetic and molecular basis of drug resistance and species-specific drug action in schistosome parasites." Science (New York, NY) **342**(6164): 1385-1389.
- van der Werf, M. J., S. J. de Vlas, S. Brooker, C. W. Looman, N. J. Nagelkerke, et al. (2003). "Quantification of clinical morbidity associated with schistosome infection in sub-Saharan Africa." Acta Trop **86**(2-3): 125-139.
- Vaux, R., C. Schnoeller, R. Berkachy, L. B. Roberts, J. Hagen, et al. (2016). "Modulation of the Immune Response by Nematode Secreted Acetylcholinesterase Revealed by Heterologous Expression in *Trypanosoma musculi*." PLoS Path **12**(11): e1005998.

Vermeire, J. J., J. E. Humphries and T. P. Yoshino (2005). "Signal transduction in larval trematodes: putative systems associated with regulating larval motility and behaviour." Parasitology **131**(S1): S57-S70.

Vibanco-Perez, N. and A. Landa-Piedra (1998). "Glutathione S-transferase in helminth parasites." Rev Latinoam Microbiol **40**(1-2): 73-85.

Von Samson-Himmelstjerna, G., W. J. Blackhall, J. S. McCarthy and P. J. Skuce (2007). "Single nucleotide polymorphism (SNP) markers for benzimidazole resistance in veterinary nematodes." Parasitology **134**(Pt 8): 1077-1086.

Vyas, N. A., S. S. Bhat, A. S. Kumbhar, U. B. Sonawane, V. Jani, et al. (2014). "Ruthenium(II) polypyridyl complex as inhibitor of acetylcholinesterase and Abeta aggregation." Eur J Med Chem **75**: 375-381.

Walker, J., P. Crowley, A. D. Moreman and J. Barrett (1993). "Biochemical properties of cloned glutathione S-transferases from *Schistosoma mansoni* and *Schistosoma japonicum*." Mol Biochem Parasitol **61**(2): 255-264.

Wang, W., L. Wang and Y. S. Liang (2012). "Susceptibility or resistance of praziquantel in human schistosomiasis: a review." Parasitol Res **111**(5): 1871-1877.

Wangchuk, P., P. R. Giacomini, M. S. Pearson, M. J. Smout and A. Loukas (2016). "Identification of lead chemotherapeutic agents from medicinal plants against blood flukes and whipworms." Sci Rep **6**: 32101.

Wangchuk, P., M. S. Pearson, P. R. Giacomin, L. Becker, J. Sotillo, et al. (2016). "Compounds Derived from the Bhutanese Daisy, *Ajania nubigena*, Demonstrate Dual Anthelmintic Activity against *Schistosoma mansoni* and *Trichuris muris*." PLoS Negl Trop Dis **10**(8): e0004908.

Webster, B. L., O. T. Diaw, M. M. Seye, D. S. Faye, J. R. Stothard, et al. (2013). "Praziquantel treatment of school children from single and mixed infection foci of intestinal and urogenital schistosomiasis along the Senegal River Basin: monitoring treatment success and re-infection patterns." Acta Trop **128**(2): 292-302.

Webster, B. L., V. R. Southgate and D. T. Littlewood (2006). "A revision of the interrelationships of *Schistosoma* including the recently described *Schistosoma guineensis*." Int J Parasitol **36**(8): 947-955.

Williams, R. M. (1969). "Antibodies to acetylcholinesterase." Proc Natl Acad Sci USA **62**(4): 1175-1180.

Williamson, S., C. Moffat, M. Gomersall, N. Saranzewa, C. Connolly, et al. (2013). "Exposure to Acetylcholinesterase Inhibitors Alters the Physiology and Motor Function of Honeybees." Frontiers in Physiology **4**(13).

Wilson, S., F. M. Jones, G. J. van Dam, P. L. Corstjens, G. Riveau, et al. (2014). "Human *Schistosoma haematobium* antifecundity immunity is dependent on transmission intensity and associated with immunoglobulin G1 to worm-derived antigens." J Infect Dis **210**(12): 2009-2016.

Wolfe, A. D. (1989). "The monoclonal antibody AE-2 modulates fetal bovine serum acetylcholinesterase substrate hydrolysis." Biochimica et biophysica acta **997**(3): 232-235.

- Wyszomirska, R. M., N. F. Nishimura, J. R. Almeida, A. Yamanaka and E. C. Soares (2005). "High serum laminin and type IV collagen levels in *Schistosomiasis mansoni*." Arq Gastroenterol **42**(4): 221-225.
- X.-M., H., Y. L.-W., H. G.-L., Y. Q.-P., H. Z.-J., et al. (2011). "RNA interference of ace1 and ace2 in *Chilo suppressalis* reveals their different contributions to motor ability and larval growth." Insect Mol Biol **20**(4): 507-518.
- Xiao, D., Y. H. Lu, Q. L. Shang, D. L. Song and X. W. Gao (2015). "Gene silencing of two acetylcholinesterases reveals their cholinergic and non-cholinergic functions in *Rhopalosiphum padi* and *Sitobion avenae*." Pest Manage Sci **71**(4): 523-530.
- Xie, W., J. A. Stribley, A. Chatonnet, P. J. Wilder, A. Rizzino, et al. (2000). "Postnatal developmental delay and supersensitivity to organophosphate in gene-targeted mice lacking acetylcholinesterase." J Pharmacol Exp Ther **293**(3): 896-902.
- Xu, Y.-Z. and M. H. Dresden (1990). "The hatching of schistosome eggs." Exp Parasitol **70**(2): 236-240.
- Ye, X., L. Yang, D. Stanley, F. Li and Q. Fang (2017). "Two *Bombyx mori* acetylcholinesterase genes influence motor control and development in different ways." Sci Rep **7**(1): 4985.
- You, H., G. N. Gobert, X. Du, G. Pali, P. Cai, et al. (2016). "Functional characterisation of *Schistosoma japonicum* acetylcholinesterase." Parasites & Vectors **9**: 328.
- You, H., C. Liu, X. Du and D. McManus (2017). "Acetylcholinesterase and Nicotinic Acetylcholine Receptors in Schistosomes and Other Parasitic Helminths." Molecules **22**(9): 1550.



You, H., C. Liu, X. Du, S. Nawaratna, V. Rivera, et al. (2018). "Suppression of *Schistosoma japonicum* acetylcholinesterase affects parasite growth and development." Int J Mol Sci **19**(8): 2426.

You, H., R. J. Stephenson, G. N. Gobert and D. P. McManus (2014). "Revisiting glucose uptake and metabolism in schistosomes: new molecular insights for improved schistosomiasis therapies." Front Genet **5**: 176.

You, H., W. Zhang, M. K. Jones, G. N. Gobert, J. Mulvenna, et al. (2010). "Cloning and characterisation of *Schistosoma japonicum* insulin receptors." PLoS One **5**(3): e9868.

Young, N. D., A. R. Jex, B. Li, S. Liu, L. Yang, et al. (2012). "Whole-genome sequence of *Schistosoma haematobium*." Nat Genet **44**(2): 221-225.

Zhan, C. G., F. Zheng and D. W. Landry (2003). "Fundamental reaction mechanism for cocaine hydrolysis in human butyrylcholinesterase." J Am Chem Soc **125**(9): 2462-2474.

Zhang, X.-J. and D. S. Greenberg (2012). "Acetylcholinesterase involvement in apoptosis." Front Genet **5**.

## Appendices

Supplementary Table 3.1.

### Oligonucleotides used in this project

Gene	Direction	Sequence
<b>fSmAChE1</b>	Fwd	GAATTCGCGGCCGCGAATTC
	Rev	TCTAGAGGTCTAGAGCTCGAG
<b>fSmBChE1</b>	Fwd	GAATTCGCGGCCGCGAATTC
	Rev	TCTAGAGGTCTAGAGCTCGAG
<b>fSmAChE3</b>	Fwd	GAATTCGCGGCCGCGAATTC
	Rev	TCTAGAGGTCTAGAGCTCGAG
<b>pSmAChE1</b>	Fwd	GACAGAAACCACATGATGTTGGAA
	Rev	TTCCAACATCATGTGGTTTCTGTC
<b>pSmBChE1</b>	Fwd	TCCAGGAAGCACATGGTCTTCACT
	Rev	AGTGAAGACCATGTGCTTCCTGGA
<b>pSmAChE3</b>	Fwd	CGCCATATGCTCTCCAAAGCGTGGTTACT
	Rev	CGCCTCGAGCGGATCCCAACTTAGTCTCATC
<b>SmAChE1 qPCR</b>	Fwd	ATGGATATGAGATTGAGTATG
	Rev	CTGGAAGGATGTTAGGAT

<b><i>SmBChE1</i> qPCR</b>	Fwd	CTACTCGTAATGATGACT
	Rev	GGCTGAATTATACAAGATT
<b><i>SmAChE3</i> qPCR</b>	Fwd	ATGCGACCACACTATCACCA
	Rev	CCTGATGTAAATCCACCACCA
<b><i>SGTP1</i> qPCR</b>	Fwd	CTGCAGCTTATTCACTGAGTCAATC
	Rev	CCACCGATGTTTTTCTGTATAACAGGAT
<b><i>SGTP4</i> qPCR</b>	Fwd	AGCCAAGGAGTTAACTTATTATGCAATTTATTG
	Rev	TCCAACAGATAATAACGATAACTAAAAATGGTAAGAA
<b><i>SmCOX1</i> qPCR</b>	Fwd	TAGGGTTGGTGGTGTACACAG
	Rev	ACGGCCATCACCATACTAGC

<b>Gene</b>	<b>Target sequence for siRNA duplex</b>
<i>SmAChE1</i>	CAGGAGCTTTAATGTTTGGCA
<i>SmBChE1</i>	GTATCATCTTGTACAAAGTTTAAGA
<i>SmAChE3</i>	CATCAAAACCAATTGGTAAATTACGT
Luciferase	ACTGAGACTACATCAGCTATTCTGAT

Supplementary Table 3.2

Identification of secreted form of *SmChE* by MALDI-TOF/TOF mass spectrometry purified by Edrophonium chloride

Accession number <sup>a</sup>	Protein name	Molecular function	Score	Seq(Sig) <sup>b</sup>	emPAI <sup>c</sup>	Peptide sequences
Smp_154600.1	Carboxylic ester hydrolase	carboxylic ester hydrolase activity	15457	19	4.64	SFKCPTINMATAVTNDYR CPTINMATAVTNDYR RAHTLPVYFYEFQHR AHTLPVYFYEFQHR TVSLPMPK QLSDIMMTYWANFAR TGDPNILPDGR HVTDLNLPDDPDEITEDQLK NPFIEWPEFR NPFIEWPEFRNSTK SAPANLLVSTRPR RWYPALLQQVER
Smp_125350.1	protein (S09 family)	acetylcholinesterase activity	89	2	0.13	ALGTGSWTSLEVVK YETYSPhSVATR
Smp_034840.1	14-3-3 epsilon	protein domain specific binding	53	2	0.38	VFSAVEQTEGMR DILELIDK

<sup>a</sup> Protein identification is from Uniport database

<sup>b</sup> number of significant distinct sequences

<sup>c</sup> Exponentially Modified Protein Abundance Index

Supplementary Table 4.1.

**siRNAs used for gene silencing**

<b>Gene</b>	<b>Target sequence for siRNA duplex</b>
<i>SmAChE1</i>	CAGGAGCTTTAATGTTTGGCA
<i>SmBChE1</i>	GTATCATCTTGTACAAAGTTTAAGA
<i>SmAChE3</i>	CATCAAAACCAATTGGTAAATTACGT
Luciferase	ACTGAGACTACATCAGCTATTCTGAT